

792.2.31.

MEMOIRS AND TRAVELS

OF

Mauritius Augustus Count de Benpowsky;

MAGNATE OF THE KINGDOMS OF HUNGARY
AND POLAND, ONE OF THE CHIEFS OF THE
CONFEDERATION OF POLAND, &c. &c.

CONSISTING OF HIS MILITARY OPERATIONS IN POLAND, HIS
EXILE INTO KAMCHATKA, HIS ESCAPE AND VOYAGE FROM
THAT PENINSULA THROUGH THE NORTHERN PACIFIC
OCEAN, TOUCHING AT JAPAN AND FORMOSA, TO
CANTON IN CHINA, WITH AN ACCOUNT OF
THE FRENCH SETTLEMENT HE WAS
APPOINTED TO FORM UPON THE
ISLAND OF MADAGASCAR.

WRITTEN BY HIMSELF.

TRANSLATED FROM THE

ORIGINAL MANUSCRIPT.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

V O L. I.

D U B L I N:

Printed by William Porter,

FOR P. WOGAN, L. WHITE, P. BYRNE, J. MOORE, C. LEWIS,
GRUEBER & M^cALLISTER, G. DRAPER, W. JONES,
AND R. WHITE.

M, MCC, XC,



24 JUN 1970 0517Z

U. S. D. I.

CONTENTS

OF THE

FIRST VOLUME.

AN ACCOUNT OF THE TROUBLES IN POLAND IN
THE YEARS 1768, 1769; MORE PARTICULARLY
THOSE EVENTS IN WHICH THE COUNT BE-
NYOWSKY HAD A SHARE, AND WHICH TERMI-
NATED IN HIS BEING MADE PRISONER BY THE
RUSSIANS. Page i

JOURNAL OF THE TRAVELS OF THE COUNT BEN-
YOWSKY INTO SIBERIA. 49

C H A P. I.

*Introduction. The Count arrives at Tobo'zk, the capi-
tal of Siberia. Humanity of the governor. Depar-
ture from that place. Villages on the road. City
of Tara. River and town of Tom'szky. The Tartars
interest themselves in favour of the exiles. A propo-
sal is made to the Count to escape to China, to which
his wounds prevent his acceding. Present to the
exiles from the Tartars. Disinterested behaviour
of their conductor.* 49

a 2

C H A P.

C H A P. II.

Departure from Tomshky. Juska Krasnoiarfzk. Illimsk. Price current of European goods and furs at that place. Jakutzk. Privileged company of traders in furs. The Count projects his future escape in concert with M. Hoffman. A society of exiles formed. They depart for Jakutzk. Leaving M. Hoffman behind. Their guards quarrel. Alarming consequence of Mr. Hoffman's death. Its effects happily prevented. 56

C H A P. III.

Village of Judoma. Sledges drawn by dogs. Arrival at Ochoczk. Description of that town and harbour. State of its commerce. The exiles embark for Kamchatka. Their dangerous passage. 66

C H A P. IV.

Arrival at Kamchatka. Conference with some exiles there. They wait upon the governor, and receive instructions. Village of the exiles. Ordinances of the Czar Peter for their regulation. 74

C H A P. V.

The Count forms an intimacy with Mr. Crustiew, an exile. Society established for projecting the means of escape. The Count's speech and plan of a constitution. The exiles wait upon the governor and the chancellor. The governor appoints the Count to teach the languages to his children. An unforeseen event tends greatly to mitigate the distresses and advance the projects of the exiles. 82

C H A P.

C O N T E N T S.

C H A P. VI.

The Count enters upon his office as language-master. The governor presents him with a female slave, and a sledge drawn by dogs. A proposal made to him by some of the chief gentlemen of the town to establish a school. A party at chess. An evening's entertainment. Partiality of Miss Aphanasia Nilow, the governor's youngest daughter, for the Count. Madame Nilow approves her attachment. 91

C H A P. VII.

A building erected for a school. Conversation with Madame Nilow. Profits arising from the Count's skill at chess. Miss Aphanasia converses with the Count. The society of exiles reinforced. Hunting the bear. 95

C H A P. VIII.

Public school opened. The society of exiles meet on business relative to their escape by sea. Chess. The Count composes charts of the coasts and islands adjoining to Kamchatka. Dangerous consequence of the affair last debated in the society of exiles. Averted by the Count, who narrowly escapes assassination. His enemy punished. 101

C H A P. IX.

The exiles narrowly escape poisoning, on New Year's Day. Discovery of the author, who discloses their project, as communicated to him by one of their number. The exiles meet, and put the traitor to death in the night. Farther enquiries made by government, which are rendered abortive by an accidental circumstance. 108

C H A P.

C H A P. X.

The Count constructs a musical instrument for his scholar Miss Aphanasia. Members proposed to the society of exiles. Plan of operation settled. The governor proposes a journey. Large sums of money won at chess, and part presented to the governor's family. Miss Aphanasia declares her affection for the Count in the presence of her father, who is exceedingly irritated, but is pacified by his colleagues in office. The governor makes the necessary dispositions to reverse the sentence of exile under which the Count was banished.

112

C H A P. XI.

The Count is in danger of being put to death by his associates. Their suspicions removed. An embarrassing dilemma. Presents made to the Count. The manner of his absolution from the sentence of exile.—He makes a proposal to the council. Generous disposition of the chief inhabitants of the town. Consequences of the Count's advancement.

117

C H A P. XII.

Proof of the confidence and attachment of the exiles to the Count. The Governor and Council liberate the exiles. The Count promises to procure the enlargement of the person who attempted to poison him. Farther progress of the exiles in their projects to escape. An entertainment proposed. The gentlemen of the town make presents to the Count. Good effects of the Count's exertions in favour of his enemy.

124

C H A P. XIII.

Preparations for marriage.—Singular preliminary custom.—Precautions for preserving secrecy and securing

ing

CONTENTS.

vii

ing the progress of the undertaking of the exiles during the Count's absence. Grand projects for creating governments and empires in the north. An entertainment on the occasion of the freedom of the exiles.

130

CHAP. XIV.

A journal of an excursion made by the governor of Bolsoretsky Ostrogg, in company with the Count de Benyowsky.

138

CHAP. XV.

An abridgment of the history and description of Kamchatka.

144

CHAP. XVI.

An account of the natives of Kamchatka, their origin, food, habitations, religion, &c. The narrative of the proceedings of the exiles resumed. Preparations for war. The constitution of the society of exiles altered, consequence thence arising.

149

CHAP. XVII.

Various proceedings in the association for projecting the escape of the exiles from slavery.

157

CHAP. XVIII.

The exiles in danger of treachery. They endeavour to procure a vessel, but without success. Their military arrangement. Final project.

163

CHAP. XIX.

A journey to Lopatka. Siberian sorcery. Return to Bolsba.

171

CHAP.

C H A P. XX.

A dangerous disturbance among the exiles. Its consequence. 178

C H A P. XXI.

The Count negotiates with the captain of a vessel. Preparations for the approaching crisis. 186

C H A P. XXII.

Preparations for the departure. Miss Aphanasia discovers the intention of the exiles. 193

C H A P. XXIII.

Various proceedings: The Chancellor receives information of the attempts of the exiles. The Count's exertions to prevent the consequences of this discovery. 200

C H A P. XXIV.

The subject of the preceding chapter continued. 206

C H A P. XXV.

Various proceedings relative to the projected escape of the exiles, and the discoveries made by government. 210

C H A P. XXVI.

Proceedings of the government of Kamchatka, in consequence of the discovery of the Count's plan to liberate the exiles. 217

C H A P.

CONTENTS.

12

CHAP. XXVII.

The government sends a military force to take the Count prisoner.—The exiles oppose them, and by their superior bravery and military skill, assisted by a fortunate concurrence of events, they gain possession of the fort. The Governor is slain in the attack. 225

CHAP. XXVIII.

The proceedings of the Count and his party of exiles, from the time of gaining possession of the fort, to the time of the surrender of the military force of the government, who gave hostages to the Count. 230

CHAP. XXIX.

Transactions from the time of the receiving of the hostages from the military of the province, to the final embarkation of the Count and his party in the St. Peter and St. Paul. 237

CHAP. XXX.

A short extract of voyages made to the eastward of Kamchatka. 247

CHAP. XXXI.

Minutes drawn up, for the purpose of forming a Chart, together with details respecting Siberia, and the sea coast of Kamchatka; and a description of the Kurrelles and Aleuthes Islands. 251

CHAP. XXXII.

A description of Kamchatka. 257

CHAP.

C O N T E N T S.

C H A P. XXXIII.

Remarks on the Coast of Kamchatka. 260

C H A P. XXXIV.

A description of the Aleuthes Islands discovered to the eastward of Kamchatka. 261

C H A P. XXXV.

A description of the Kurelles Islands. 266

C H A P. XXXVI.

A description of the Islands of Jedzo. 272

C H A P. XXXVII.

A supplement to the description of the Coast of Tary and the Island Saghalin. 276

A continuation of the Memoirs of the Count de Benyowsky: being a journal of his voyage by sea, from the peninsula of Kamchatka to Canton in China. 278

THE EDITOR'S PREFACE,

TO

THE FIRST EDITION.

IN presenting the following Memoirs to the public, it will not be incumbent upon me to make any remarks on the interesting nature of their contents. It is sufficiently established, that the author was a man of ability, possessed of a disposition singularly calculated for adventures, and brought up in a school of irregular warfare, in which the intrepidity of his mind, and the power he possessed of agitating and impelling the minds of others, were matured by a severe course of practice. The observations and remarks, which might arise from considerations of this kind, are left to the reader: my task will consist in the simple exposition of such facts as tend to shew the authenticity of the work, and the degree of credit to which it is entitled.

About the latter end of the year 1784, Mr. J. Hyacinth de Magellan, F. R. S. &c. a gentleman well known in every part of Europe, by the philosophical correspondence he has for many years carried on with the first literary characters, shewed me a printed paper in French, containing proposals for publishing the memoirs and voyages of the Count de Benyowsky, in three volumes, by subscription; a design which was afterwards given up. The Count was not at that time in England, but had departed upon a private expedition to the island of Madagascar; in the fitting out of which, Mr. Magellan had advanced

advanced a very considerable sum. This expedition was not, however, attended with success: Mr. Magellan determined therefore to publish this work; and accordingly disposed of the copy to the present proprietors, at the same time that he engaged to communicate the transactions of the Count, from the conclusion of the present Memoirs to the time of his death. An unforeseen event rendered him incapable of performing this engagement: for soon after Christmas, 1788, he was attacked with a severe illness, which affected his memory so much as to prevent his attending to any literary pursuits, and has continued ever since. I need not enlarge on this unhappy event any farther than to observe that it has deprived me of the expected information, and obliged me to give a detail of the facts from his correspondence.

This short history may serve to shew by what progress the manuscript came into my hands; and in order to clear myself of the slightest suspicion of standing before the public in any other character than that which I profess, as editor of the work, I have recommended to the proprietors, to present the original copy to the British Museum, as a place of deposit peculiarly calculated for the security of the public in such cases. To this they very readily agreed; and the original French manuscript has accordingly been presented. It contains all which is exhibited in the following volumes; I have thought it of advantage to divide the matter which precedes the journal into chapters, and have added the titles, instead of retaining the form of one undivided narrative, as it is in the original.

The credibility of any work can be tried in two ways only; by internal, or by collateral evidence. It is from the internal evidence, or the mutual coincidence of facts, that we judge of the fidelity of any writer in the first place: if this be wanting, it is an
infallible

infallible conclusion, that the author is either deceived himself, or intends to impose on his readers; but if, on the contrary, this evidence be perfect, it is not so strongly conclusive of truth, as the defect is of falshood. Internal evidence amounts to an high degree of probability, and is the only dependence we can have when a writer speaks of facts and places not known or visited by others. I have not perceived any defect of this kind in these memoirs: they contain nothing which is at all improbable or contradictory. As far, therefore, as the adventures of the Count de Benyowsky are peculiar to himself, we must depend on his authority. The greater part, however, is capable of being supported by collateral evidence. His share in the troubles in Poland is a recent business: most of the persons he mentions possessed eminent stations in society, and many are still living. We are not now in the dark with regard to the land passage across the Russian dominions in Asia, nor the general position and other circumstances relative to a considerable extent of the North-East part of the old Continent. When we proceed to consider the situation of the coasts and islands of the Northern sea between Asia and America, it is true that great difficulties * arise from the ignorance and inaccuracy of the Russian accounts and observations made by unskilful, and perhaps in some instances unprincipled men, without proper instruments, in a tract covered with fogs of such frequency, as to be almost perpetual. Here, however, we have the inestimable advantage of recurring to the observations of those judicious navigators, Cook, Clerke, Gore, and King, whose labours have reflected so much honour upon the

* See Coxe's Russian Discoveries, and the authors by him cited: also Cook, Clerke, Gore, and King's Voyage to the Pacific Ocean.

liberality and scientific zeal of our sovereign. The only part therefore of the Count's adventures which cannot readily be compared with the collateral testimony of others, consists in his visitation of the islands of Japan, Liqueio, and Formosa; and the discoveries which he made in the course of a voyage through an unfrequented part of the ocean. On the evidence of these facts, I need not make any observations, because they stand exactly in the same predicament as all other new discoveries do: they must be admitted on the credit of the discoverer, until subsequent researches shall either confirm or disprove them.

Before I proceed to consider the degree of accuracy of the Count's journal, I shall present the reader with a passage or two of Captain Cook's last voyage, which strongly confirm several particulars in the narration of the former. When Captain Cook was at Oonalashka, several civilities and mutual communications took place between him and Erasim Gregorioff Sin Ismyloff, who exhibits a conspicuous figure in the following memoirs. After relating these [vol. II, p. 496 * of his voyage] he proceeds [page 499] to add the following: "But
 " a voyage which he himself [Ismyloff] had per-
 " formed, engaged our attention more than any
 " other. He said that on the 12th of May, 1771,
 " he sailed from Bolsheretz in a Russian vessel,
 " to one of the Kuril islands, named Mareekan, in
 " the latitude of 47°, where there is a harbour, and
 " a Russian settlement. From this island he pro-
 " ceeded to Japan, where he seems to have made
 " but a short stay. For when the Japanese came
 " to know that he and his companions were Chris-
 " tians, they made signs for them to be gone;
 " but did not, so far as we could understand him,

* The Edition before me is the second.

" offer

“ offer any insult or force. From Japan he got to
“ Canton; and from thence to France in a French
“ ship. From France he travelled to Petersburg,
“ and was afterwards sent out again to Kamtschatka.
“ What became of the vessel in which he first em-
“ barked we could not learn; nor what was the
“ principal object of the voyage. His not being
“ able to speak one word of French made this story
“ a little suspicious. He did not even know the
“ name of any one of the most common things
“ that must have been in use every day while he
“ was on board the ship, and in France. And yet
“ he seemed clear as to the times of his arriving at
“ the different places, and of his leaving them,
“ which he put down in writing.”

In the third volume, p. 193, it appears that Ismyloff, in a letter to the commander at Bolsheretz, had represented the English vessels as two small packet boats, and cautioned him to be on his guard; and that it was not without the exertion of all the commander's authority, that the inhabitants were prevented from abandoning the town, in consequence of their fears, lest their visitors should prove to be French.

“ Their extreme apprehensions,” continues Capt. King, “ were principally occasioned by some circumstances attending an insurrection that had happened at Bolsheretz a few years before, in which the commander had lost his life. We were informed that an exiled Polish officer, named Beniowski, taking advantage of the confusion into which the town was thrown, had seized upon a galliot then lying at the entrance of the Bolchoireka, and had forced on board a number of Russian sailors, sufficient to navigate her: that he had put on shore a part of the crew at the Kourile islands; and among the rest, Ismyloff, who, as the reader will recollect, had puzzled

“ us

“ us exceedingly at Oonalaska with the history of
 “ this transaction ; though for want of understand-
 “ ing his language, we could not then make out
 “ all the circumstances attending it : that he passed
 “ in sight of Japan ; made Luconia ; and was there
 “ directed how to steer to Canton ; that arriving
 “ there, he had applied to the French, and had
 “ got a passage in one of their India ships to France ;
 “ and that most of the Russians had likewise returned
 “ to Europe in French ships ; and had afterward
 “ found their way to Peterburgh. We met with
 “ three of Beniowski's crew in the harbour of St.
 “ Peter and St. Paul ; and from thence we learnt
 “ the circumstances of the above story.”

Capt. King mentions that the arrival of Beniowski at Canton was confirmed by the gentlemen of the English factory there, and observes that from Kerguelen's voyage, it appeared that this extraordinary person had entered the French service, and was commander of a new settlement at Madagascar, when that navigator touched there in 1774.

The public prints of the year 1772 took notice of the arrival of the Count de Benyowsky at Canton in the month of September, the year before (1771.) The Gentleman's Magazine for June, 1772, page 272, contains an account which is too long to be quoted, more especially as the circumstances are in some respects improbable, and in others unfounded. This account says that a vessel of uncommon appearance arrived at Canton with sixty-five persons on board, five being in women's apparel, commanded by the Baron de Benyowsky, who was taken prisoner by the Russians, in Poland, and carried to Casan, from which place he made his escape with others, by overpowering their guard ; that they directed their route to Kamchatka, where he had a friend, who supplied him with a vessel ; that he sailed for China, but by stress of weather was ob-
 . liged

liged to stand to the Eastward, and made the coast of America, in latitude 57° ; was prevented by contrary winds from proceeding to Acapulco, and then stood for the Philippine islands, but was again disappointed by contrary winds; and that lastly he reached Macao after five months passage from Kamchatka.

A paper subjoined to this account with the signature of Benyowsky asserts, that he left Kamchatka in May 1771, and arrived at Macao in September, after having put in at Japan.

This information from the Gentleman's Magazine is evidently no more than the reports of the day. For it is not in the least probable that prisoners at Casan should imagine and execute a peregrination of at least four thousand miles, over the most inhospitable part of the surface of the globe, with the hope of finding a friend who would present them with a ship: or that they should actually obtain a ship, and then wander over the face of the ocean in the strange way they are here said to have done. It may be admitted however, as an evidence, that the Count did not arrive at China at an earlier period than is specified in his Memoirs, and this fact will be of use in considering the value of the information obtained at Kamchatka by the Captains Cook and King.

I must observe therefore that Ismyloff, who is not represented in any favourable light by the Count in his Memoirs, and was guilty of a trick which seems in some respect to degrade him, by writing an unfriendly and false letter to be carried by the English navigators to the Commander at Bolcheretzsk, was probably disposed to conceal some part of the knowledge he possessed, and does not appear incapable of perverting such facts as his own views, whatever they were, might require to be falsified; that it is by no means probable that the Count, at the head

VOL. I.

b

of

of a set of daring men over whom he had no well supported authority, should touch at the Kurilles islands, for the reason he himself mentions, namely, the probability that they should change their minds and force him to return to Kamchatka; but, on the contrary, that he should wish to render their return impracticable by standing for the Aleutian islands or American shore, in the first place, as being more remote; and on the other hand the disposition of his crew to proceed to the Northward might have been partly grounded on their fears of quitting the peninsula of Kamchatka. Again, it does not appear how four months could be employed in passing simply to Marikan, touching at Japan and making Luconia in his way to Macao, even supposing he had sailed so far out of his way as to that Spanish settlement. On these accounts then, I think that Ismyloff's information, with that of the three Russians at Kamchatka, considered under all the disadvantages of a want of language for mutual intelligence, which Captain Cook complains of, are really valid, so far only as to prove that the Count Benyowsky did really exert his military abilities at Kamchatka in a serious insurrection in which the Governor lost his life; that the inhabitants of Bolsheretzki were so greatly affected, and the impression of their fears was so strong and permanent, as to urge them to think of abandoning their habitations after an interval of eight whole years; an impression which the threat of burning their women and children in the church may readily account for: that a very considerable time having elapsed between his departure, which is correctly given by Ismyloff, and his arrival at China, which is an object of no question, he could not have subsisted without putting in somewhere; and that after leaving the Aleutian islands, there are no places into which choice or necessity could more immediately have driven him than
the

the islands of Japan, Liqueio and Formosa. In a word, the collateral evidence appears clear and positive where it supports the credibility of the Count's narrative, but confused and uncertain in the particulars wherein it differs from him; and the whole is of such a nature as not to be put in competition with an authentic journal from the hands of the author.

Without entering into any comparison of the voyages of the Count Benyowsky with those of others who have navigated the Northern seas, I shall confine my remarks to such parts of his journal as will admit of elucidation from the voyages of our illustrious countrymen. But in the first place it must be premised, that the Count's skill in navigation, whatever eminence it might have procured him in Kamchatka, appears to have been very moderate. In his journal we find the latitude, longitude, wind, current and course. He never distinguished the latitude by account from that by observation. I suppose however that he may have had one of the old quadrants of Davis, or perhaps a fore-staff; but he certainly did not possess one of Hadley's*. His latitudes in general therefore may be supposed to be within half, or perhaps a quarter of a degree of the truth. I have not paid any attention to the winds and course made good, but apprehend that his longitudes must be subject not only to all the usual errors of the dead-reckoning, but likewise to others, arising from his not knowing the variation of the compass, (except perhaps by conjecture) and from his considering the current as a daily element in his log-book. He has no where mentioned the method

* Ismyloff, or Ismaeloff, received an Hadley's quadrant from Captain Cook as a present, of which he in a very short time learned the uses. Hence it seems probable that Hadley's quadrant is scarcely known in those parts, and that the Count in particular did not possess one.—Voyage to the Pacific Ocean II. 505.

he used to ascertain the direction and velocity of these currents, and as every experienced navigator must be aware that no such method exists, except such as may be derived from comparing the reckoning with celestial observations or a time-keeper, it will follow of course that this element has rendered his longitude more uncertain.

By tracing the Count's voyage to the Northward upon the chart numbered 36 in Cook's third Voyage, I find that he made Beering's island when his reckoning placed the ship a degree and a half to the Westward. This is a natural consequence of the Easterly variation not being allowed for, and the same cause must have affected his reckoning still more as he proceeded to the Northward. Hence I conclude (with the supposition that his latitudes were at least half a degree too high, and his longitudes very considerably to the Westward of the ship's true place, both which follow from the variation being neglected) that he made Clerke's islands on the 3d of June, and stood over for the land to the Northward of Tsuchotskoi Nefs, where he anchored; again returned to Clerke's islands; sailed from thence to the Eastward;* made the American Continent, and coasted along it between Point Shallow Water and Shoal Nefs, which was unexplored by Cook; after which he stood to the Southward and anchored at Onemak, in latitude $54^{\circ}\frac{1}{4}$, the error of his reckoning being about five degrees in longitude to the Westward, an error which remarkably coincides with that of Israylor's chart,† and proves almost beyond a doubt that the Count really arrived at the Aleuthes by this circuitous navigation,

* The note on page 305 is too general. The Count does not appear to have reached America in that latitude.

† Voyage to the Pacific Ocean before quoted, II. 502.

and that Ismyloff gained his information by sailing with him; more especially as such an error in longitude could hardly have arisen in running directly from Awatscha Bay to the Aleuthes, which lie on the same parallel, and are only a short fortnight's sail asunder.

I do not pretend that there are no other causes of uncertainty in the Count's Journal, neither is it my intention to enter into a minute disquisition upon it. The public possess faithful copies of the documents which have passed through my hands, and I have no wish nor claim to the absurd privilege of directing their judgment. But it becomes me to state the reasons which guided me in examining these Memoirs, and have convinced me that the veracity of the Count may be relied on; that the disagreements of collateral evidence are much more likely to arise from the imperfections of that evidence, than from his want of fidelity; and that the real difficulties may be easily accounted for by any one, whose skill and experience are sufficient to enable him to estimate the probable errors that must have resulted from the want of instruments, and slender knowledge of the Count's in marine affairs.

The other parts of the Count's Journal need no comment. That he should stand across the Pacific Ocean and direct his course for China, are obviously the result of the dictates of common sense; that extreme distress should follow the want of proper subordination among a set of exiles, or men of desperate fortune and adventure, is not at all wonderful; and that such men, without any settled destination, and acting throughout from the impulse either of necessity or their own inclinations, should range from one island to another, where their wants could be best supplied, is what the slightest ideas of cause and effect would have foretold. The discoveries and adventures of the Count on this passage and elsewhere

where must speak for themselves, and I have no doubt will be found interesting, as well from the nature of the incidents as the novelty of the places of action.

It is still less necessary to enlarge on the effect which the abilities and acquisitions of the Count produced at the Court of France, and the undertaking which was afterwards entrusted to his management. The leading facts of this part of his Memoirs have sufficient collateral evidence. Neither need I make any remarks on his political principles with regard to colonization, of which I think the intelligent subjects of our free and liberal government will be at no loss to form a proper opinion; whether they be viewed in a civil or commercial light. I will therefore only add on the subject of the Memoirs, that the Count, in his short history of Kamchatka, appears to have had Kracheninnikow's voyage into Siberia before him, a work which Captain King * considers as worthy of entire credit. It will easily be seen, however, that our author, by speaking always in his own person, and mentioning his authorities in several places, means to confirm all the general facts as from his own observation. I must take notice, that the word *castor*, which I have every where rendered beaver, is used throughout this work to denote the sea beaver or otter; that the word *corvette*, which I think denotes the kind of vessel called an hooker, has been mostly retained, on account of my being uncertain whether the French apply it to any particular vessel, or simply to denote a packet; and that I have kept the spelling of proper names uniform, though it is not so in the manuscript, the Count's signature in his own hand being frequently varied.

* Voyage before cited, III. 205

Mr. Magellan's correspondence on the Count's subsequent adventures, having been submitted to my inspection, appears to require a very considerable share of deliberation and mutual comparison of its parts, before the more particular events can be placed in a proper light. Several of the letters from individuals concerned in this adventure contradict each other; and some of them are written with such a spirit of enmity towards the Count, as renders the impartiality of the writers very doubtful. I will not here enquire how far it is probable that the failure of this last enterprize arose from a want of principles or prudence, either in the Count or in his associates. The final est knowledge of the human mind will readily shew, that when loss and wretchedness are the only consequences of an attempt founded on the most brilliant hopes, quarrels and mutual recrimination must infallibly be the result. For this reason I shall slightly trace the leading facts, with very few observations of my own.

The Count de Benyowsky and his family, with some of his associates, sailed for Maryland on the 14th of April, 1784, on board the Robert and Anne, commanded by Mr. Alexander Mac Dougall. He arrived at Baltimore on the 8th of July following, having taken with him from London a cargo of the value of near 4000*l.* sterling, consisting it seems of articles intended for the Madagascar trade. Two causes appeared to have induced him and his friends to avoid a direct voyage to that island. In the first place, they found it extremely difficult, if not impracticable, to procure the flag of any European power; and in the next, there was every reason to hope that the American merchants, whose affairs were thrown into confusion by the struggle for independence, and the subsequent loss of their colonial privileges in trading to the mother country, would

would be more ready to embrace the offer of a new channel of trade than the subjects of more established societies. This expectation was found to be just. A respectable commercial house at Baltimore was induced to join in the scheme, and supplied the Count with a ship of 450 tons, carrying twenty guns, six-pounders, and twelve swivels. This ship, cargo and stores, was estimated at somewhat more than four thousand pounds sterling, exclusive of the merchandize brought from London. It was named the Intrepid, and sailed from Baltimore on the 25th of October, 1784; every one on board being, by agreement and oath, subject to the absolute command of the Count, though the merchants of Baltimore had appointed a Captain and Super-cargo to assist the Count while under his command, and to conduct their affairs homeward bound. Their destination was the harbour of St. Augustin, on the East Coast of the island of Madagascar, where they were to form a settlement or emporium; in the establishment of which it was expected that the Count's influence with the natives, and the supremacy they had conferred on him, would have been of singular advantage. The family of the Count remained in America, on account of the pregnancy of Madame de Benyowsky. At the beginning of January the Count made the coast of Brasil,—by mistake, as his associates say, and for want of keeping enough to windward; but in his own letters he asserts, that he repaired for wood and water to this coast, in preference, for reasons which he does not specify. The former, however, seems probable; for they were near a month turning to windward in order to clear Cape Roque, and at last run dangerously aground on the island Juan Gonsalvez, near the mouth of the river Amargosa, in five degrees

grees South latitude. It was not till the month of April that the necessary repairs were completed, and they stood across the Atlantic; being at short allowance of provisions for the greatest part of the passage. The last letter of the Count was written from the coast of Brasil, and consequently the remainder of this account must come from the letters of his companions. It does not appear why he doubled the Cape of Good Hope without putting in. The first place he touched at was Sofala, on the Eastern coast of Africa, where he anchored on the 22d of May, 1785, and remained a fortnight to refresh his people. On the 7th of July they anchored in the Bay of Antangara, about ten leagues to the South-West of Cape St. Sebastian, and unloaded their cargo, the Count's intention being to proceed over land to the Bay of Anton-gil, where the ship was to meet them. It appears by the letters, that Lamboin, King of the North, who is mentioned in these Memoirs, came to pay his respects to the Count, and that a body of Se-claves under a Chief or King likewise came and encamped near him; that the Count proposed to enter into the oath of blood with him, but he excused himself till a future day, on account of the fatigue of his journey: and from the master's protest it appears, that on the 1st of August, three quarters of an hour after the long-boat had returned on board, between the hours of ten and eleven at night, a severe firing was heard and seen on shore exactly at the place of the Count's encampment; that between five and six in the morning a few scattered shot were heard in a small wood about a mile up the country, and at day-light no signs were perceived of any white men on shore, but that all the effects were removed; and lastly, that their own dangerous situation, from
the

the few hands and want of arms on board, and the probability that the Count and his party were cut off by the natives, together with the want of provisions, compelled them to depart for Joanna. From this island or Mohilia they proceeded to Oibo, where the supercargo sold the ship on account of the insurers.

If the information ended here, it might naturally be concluded that the Count's attempt had met with its fatal termination before their departure; but there is a letter from one of the persons on board, which states, that the writer and another person were not convinced that the firing was made by the natives, but that they signed the protest because overborne by numbers: and in another letter from an officer, who was brought prisoner to the Isle of France after the final destruction of the Count's party, which (as far as relates to the destruction of the Count and his people by the French) is confirmed by the writer of the former letter, I find mention indeed of a firing heard in the night; but, contrary to the protest, the writer affirms, that the ship sailed in sight of those on shore, to their great astonishment, and that it was in vain that they stood after her with the country boats. The same writer continues to state, that fifteen days after the departure of the vessel the Count departed for Angoutci, leaving most of his people behind to follow him; but the greatest part fell sick and died, two only remaining. From this letter, which, however, in many respects seems to want explanation, it appears that the power and influence of the Count was such, that he had an armed force of the natives at his command, with which he proceeded to Angoutci, and commenced hostilities against the French by seizing their storehouse. Here he busied himself in erecting a town after the manner of the country; and from hence he sent a detachment

tachment of one hundred men to take possession of the French Factory at Foul Point; but they were prevented from carrying their purpose into execution by the sight of a frigate which was at anchor off the Point. In consequence of these movements, the Government of the Isle of France sent a ship with sixty regulars on board, who landed, and attacked the Count on the morning of the 23d of May, 1786. He had constructed a small redoubt defended by two cannon, in which himself, with two Europeans and thirty natives, waited the approach of the enemy. The blacks fled at the first fire, and Benyowsky, having received a ball in his right breast, fell behind the parapet; whence he was dragged by the hair, and expired a few minutes afterwards.

Thus ended the life and adventures of the Count de Benyowsky; a man of invincible spirit, inured to hardships, and habituated to face danger and every extremity with a most uncommon degree of firmness. To these extraordinary powers, he added an intimate and almost intuitive knowledge of the human mind. By nature, education and habit, he was formed to persuade, to command, and to coerce; and his destiny gave him ample occasion to exercise these talents. Of this singular character many and various have been the opinions. Those whose interests led them to oppose him have spared no accusations against him; and their accusations are of the strongest and even the most horrid nature. His enemies have represented him as the unfeeling tyrant, and the unprincipled robber:—yet while he lived he never was without enthusiastic admirers, and warm friends who readily exerted themselves, against every risque and every calumny, to serve him. If it were expected that I should give my opinion, I would declare, that I have not yet seen any thing against him which will not bear two interpretations;

or

or which has not been written by men who contradict each other, and had an interest in traducing him. For these reasons it is that I would suspend my opinion; and these are the reasons why, in the multifarious correspondence which now lies before me, I have passed over the recriminations in silence, I have collected only such facts as appear indubitable, and have suppressed all names, because the correspondence, on account of the present firm situation of the gentleman to whom it of right belongs, has passed into my hands, without any other restriction but such as the sentiments of every man of principle and delicacy must inspire.

W. NICHOLSON.

London, Dec. 7, 1789.

POSTSCRIPT.

P O S T S C R I P T.

Since the foregoing Preface was printed, I have been favoured, by Sir Joseph Banks, Bart. P. R. S. with the communication of the following Papers, which I here insert, with a few Remarks.

No. I.

*Extrait de la Lettre de M L'Evêque le Bon, due 24
Septembre, 1771, de Macao.*

IL vient d'arriver hier a Macao un Both à Pavillion Hongrois, commandé par le Baron Hongrois, Maurice Auguste Aladar Benyorky, Conseiller du Prince Albert, duc de Saxe, Colonel de sa Majesté Apostolique Royal Imperiale la Reine d'Hongrie, et Officier d'un regiment de la Confederation de la Republique, A Couronne de Pologne.

Ce Monsieur, après avoir reçu sept blessures dans un combat contre les Russes pres de Kaminieck, fut fait prisonnier de Guerre, et conduit dans la meme ville ou se trouve détenu comme prisonnier d'Etat le Prince Szoltits, Eveque de Cracovie, Senateur de Pologne.

Le Baron a trouve le moyen de s'échaper, après avoir reçu une patente du Prince Eveque, prisonnier, qui exhorte tous les Catholiques surtout, a secourir

secourir le dit Sieur Alader Benyorsky, pour lui procurer le moyen de parvenir auprès de L'Empereur d'Allemagne, et auprès du Saint Siege Apostolique. La patente due Prelat est dattée de sa prison, le 6th Novembre, 1770.

De 54 hommes d'equipage, il ne reste plus a ce capitaine que 8 hommes en santé; tout le reste est sur le grabat. Depuis deux mois ils souffroient le faim et la soif: il a eu son embarcation deux fois brisée, deux fois ils l'ont raccomodée et remise en état. Il ne scait ni le Portugais ni l'Espagnol, mais il parle Latin, Francois, & Allemand. Il est venu par le Nord, & a cotoyé le Japan, &c.

No II.

An Account of the arrival of a small Vessel, of about eighty tons, at Macao, the 23d of September last, commanded by Baron Maurice Aout Alladar Benyorsky, Colonel in the Hungarian service, on board of which were sixty-two Hungarian soldiers, and five women, who, by their account, escaped from their imprisonment in Siberia. Taken from the Colonel's own words, by me, Nathaniel Barlow, who was at Macao the time when they arrived there.

UPON a visit I made to the Baron above-mentioned, soon after his arrival, I requested of him, as a great favour, he would be pleased to give me a recital of his adventures, as I told him something very extraordinary must have happened to him, by his coming into those parts, so remote from his own country. Agreeable to my request, he very politely acquiesced, and mentioned the following particulars, in the French language.

He

He said, that he was first secretly sent by the Court of Hungary, with a body of five thousand soldiers, to the assistance of the Catholic Confederates in Poland, who were at that time at war with the Protestant party of the same nation, assisted by the Russians. That soon after his arrival in Poland, and joining a body of the confederates, they had an engagement with the Russians, who being superior in numbers, soon defeated his body, took him, and almost all his men, prisoners, and sent them away, with all expedition, into different garrisons in Siberia. That on his arrival at the place destined for him and his party, they were put into close confinement, and treated in a most cruel manner, inasmuch, that they were determined to attempt an escape, at the hazard of their lives: very fortunately, an opportunity offered, by the guard being reduced to a small number, whom they soon overpowered, took their arms and marched off, with all expedition, towards the province of Kamchatka, where in a sea-port, named *Chevega*, he had a friend on whom he could depend for assistance in extricating him from the dangers that he was threatened with. Accordingly, after many days marching over mountains, and sometimes through almost impenetrable woods, (during which time he experienced every misery possible, by the want of provisions and water) he fortunately arrived at the above sea-port, where, to his great joy, he found his friend, by whose assistance a vessel was procured, and in a short time got ready for sailing, when the Colonel and his party embarked. As he had formerly served in the marine service of the States of Malta, he thereby learnt Navigation, by the assistance of which he intended making a coasting voyage of it to China; but being drove off the coast by a gale of wind, and not expecting to make it again, he steered to the north.

north-east, in hopes of finding some islands he had heard was in that quarter. Accordingly, after many days sailing, and great sufferings, he fortunately arrived at one of them he supposed to be near the Continent of America, where he got several kinds of refreshment; and, after staying a little time, he embarked, with a design to go to Acapulca, but not meeting with favourable winds, steered towards the Phillipine islands, where, after encountering with fresh difficulties, he arrived at the Marians, from whence intending to go to Manilla, was prevented by unfavourable winds: he then came to the resolution of steering towards China, where he fortunately arrived at the port of Macao, after a voyage of four months.

He was as far north as 63 degrees; had with him Lord Anson's voyages, translated into the Sclavonian language, which he repeatedly said was of the greatest use to him, being guided, in a great measure, by them.—In his apartment were several mathematical instruments, especially a quadrant, and a cross staff. On requesting for a sight of his drafts, he, with great reluctance, produced one, but, unluckily, a gentleman in company telling him that one of us was a sea-captain, he immediately withdrew, and carried with him the draft, by which we lost the opportunity of knowing more particulars of this very extraordinary voyage.

The vessel is fifty feet long, and sixteen broad, entirely built of fir.

*Baron Benyorsky's Narrative of a Voyage from Kamf-
chattka to Macao.*

Devenu en prison, 1769. Anné
Amenez en exile avec Mess. Princés, P. Koltik, Eveque
de Cracovia,
P. Kanguszeko,
P. Rzsevuizky,
P. Iacz,
Eveque de Kiove.

A Kamfchatka, sous 63 degreé de la Latitude du
Nord, 175 Long. 1771 L'Anne.

DANS le mois May, sortis sur le galliotte St. Piere,
passer jusque a 238 degreé de la Longitude, a 57
Latitude, d'ou, naviger a passer l'Isle Mariain par la
grande tempete, et fort vents devenu a Japon, ou,
ton de L'Androis, du Port Namqu, mil pieds a la
Texe, de la venu a l'Isle, Touza et Bonzo, de la,
jusque a Nangeafaki, d'ou aprez avoir peu de Noires
sortis et passer par les Isles Amuy, jusque a Formosa,
et l'Isle Baschet, enfin, prit le cours droitment, a
Makao, où je suis arrive dans le mois Septembre,
1771 L'Ann.

Signe par
Sortis avec 85 hommes, Baron Maurice, Aout d'Ala-
Arrivé avec 62 do. dar de Benyorsky, Colonelle
de sa Maj. Imp. Generaie
Regem. tar des les Confe-
deres.

Mem. The original from which the foregoing
is taken, being wrote with very faint ink, upon bad
paper, and German characters frequently used, have
occasioned imperfections in this Copy.

No. IV.

Extract of a Letter from the Supra-Cargoes of Council at Canton, in China, dated 20th November, 1771; received per British King.

A SMALL vessel arrived at Macao the 23d September, commanded by a Hungarian Baron, Maurice Augusto Alader Benyorky, which has occasioned much speculation. They being at Macao, and cannot obtain permission to come to Canton, we are deprived of the means to procure the intelligence which we might possibly otherwise do, had we an opportunity of discoursing with him: it seems beyond doubt, he is come from Kamschatka, but by what track, or his motive, we have only what he pleases to say, being the only person who speaks about their concerns, and he very reserved. We could wish it were in our power to give you a particular account of this affair, but cannot do more than send you the accounts we have received from others, and one that he gave himself, and signed by him. He has claimed the protection of the French; had a chop procured for him and some of his officers to come to Canton, but by their being mentioned in the chop (which was procured by Puan Khequa) under the denomination of French merchants; and the Hoppo's officer at Macao having had them described to him differently before, he returned the chop to Canton, and did not suffer them to proceed. The Mandarines here are apprehensive they may be Russians; and Puan Khequa, afraid of being drawn into some scrape, he rather chuses to decline interfering, and they are likely to remain at Macao till the French ships leave China, which ships they are to embark on board of for Europe.

Extract of a Letter from Canton, in China, to Mr. Pigou, dated the 20th November, 1771.

ON the 23d of September a small vessel, commanded by a Hungarian Baron, arrived at Macao. He says, that he was first secretly sent by the Court of Hungary, with a body of five thousand men, which he commanded, to the assistance of the Catholic Confederates in Poland, who were at war with the Protestant party of the same nation, assisted by the Russians. That soon after his arrival in Poland, and joining the Confederates, he had an engagement with the Russians, who defeated his army, and sent them into different garrisons in Siberia, where, being cruelly treated, the Colonel and party with him resolved to make their escape, which they easily effected, their guard being very weak : from thence they got to the port of Kamschatka, where they procured a small vessel, and sailing to the northward, made land, which they supposed to be part of the continent of North America. Finding themselves wrong in their tract, they altered their course, and after five weeks sail came to Japan, where they had several skirmishes with the natives. They afterwards saw the Marian islands, and thence bore away directly for Macao, being in great distress for provisions.

TRANSLATION OF THE PAPER, No I.

*Extract of a Letter from M. the Bishop Le Bon,
dated September 24th, 1771, from Macao.*

YESTERDAY arrived at Macao a vessel under Hungarian colours, commanded by the Hungarian Baron, Maurice Auguste Aladar Benyorsky, Counsellor to Prince Albert, Duke of Saxony, Colonel (in the service) of her Apostolic Royal Imperial Majesty, the Queen of Hungary, and officer of a regiment of the Confederation of the Republic of Poland.

This gentleman, after having received seven wounds in a battle against the Russians near Kami-nieck, was made prisoner of war, and conducted into the same town where the Prince Szolits, Bishop of Cracovia, is detained a prisoner of state.

The Baron found the means to escape, after having received a patent from the Prince Bishop, the prisoner, who exhorts all Catholics especially to assist the said Sieur Aladar Benyorsky, to procure him the means of repairing to the presence of the Emperor of Germany, and before the Holy Apostolical Court. The patent of the Prelate is dated from his prison, on the 6th of November, 1770.

Out of fifty-four men of his equipage, there remains no more to this Captain than eight men in health; all the rest are confined to their beds. For two months past they suffered hunger and thirst. He has been twice shipwrecked, and twice they have repaired their vessel. He is not acquainted with the Portuguese or the Spanish, but he speaks Latin, French, and German. He came from the North, and has coasted the island of Japan, &c.

REMARKS

REMARKS ON THE PAPER, No. I.

THIS Letter was written the day after the Count's arrival at Macao, and does not contain the least hint of his banishment into Siberia. It specifies no dates, except the Count's arrival at China, and that of the patent, said to be obtained at Kaminiack. I scarcely need observe, that this account does not agree with the memoirs; and that the Count was at or near the town of Ochozk, in Siberia, at the time the patent is said to have been given at Kaminiack. Upon this occasion I have not the least inclination to doubt the veracity of M. Le Bon; but whether these inconsistencies arose from the disposition of concealing the particulars of his adventures, which evidently actuated the Count, who expected great advantages from the knowledge he had acquired; or whether they may consist, for the most part, of those inaccuracies which usually accompany the relation of verbal communications, I shall not here attempt to decide.

ON THE PAPER, No. II.

IN this paper it may be observed, that the Count, being desirous of keeping the particulars of his expedition as secret as possible, judged it necessary to communicate a pretended set of adventures. The letter inserted in the Gentleman's Magazine agrees very nearly with this report of Mr. Barlow: I shall not therefore repeat the remarks I have already made upon that print. The mathematical instruments in his apartment are not described with sufficient minuteness, to clear up the doubts, or confirm the assertions, made in the note at the foot of

page xix.

page xix. It seems probable, however, that the cross-staff would not have possessed a place among his mathematical instruments, if the quadrant had been one of Hadley's construction. Mr. Barlow says the vessel was about eighty tons burthen:—Benyowsky (page 70, vol. i.) estimates it at two hundred and forty: both are, perhaps, mere guesses; but from the dimensions given in this paper, and the draft of water mentioned at page 279 of the first volume, the Count's number proves very near, though under the truth.

ON THE PAPER, No. III.

THIS is doubtless the original from which the second paper in the Gentleman's Magazine (page vii.) was translated. As the Count's intention, certainly, was not that of conveying information, but of misleading the enquirers at Canton, I have not thought it necessary either to attempt an emendation of this imperfect copy, or to attempt any translation.

ON THE PAPERS, No. IV. & V.

THESE Papers do not appear to require any comment.

MEMOIRS AND TRAVELS

OF

Mauritius Augustus Count de Benpowsky;

MAGNATE OF THE KINGDOMS OF HUNGARY
AND POLAND, ONE OF THE CHIEFS OF THE
CONFEDERATION OF POLAND, &c. &c.

CONSISTING OF HIS MILITARY OPERATIONS IN POLAND, HIS
EXILE INTO KAMCHATKA, HIS ESCAPE AND VOYAGE FROM
THAT PENINSULA THROUGH THE NORTHERN PACIFIC
OCEAN, TOUCHING AT JAPAN AND FORMOSA, TO
CANTON IN CHINA, WITH AN ACCOUNT OF
THE FRENCH SETTLEMENT HE WAS
APPOINTED TO FORM UPON THE
ISLAND OF MADAGASCAR.

MEMOIRS AND TRAVELS

OF

FRANCIS BURGESS & JOHN DE KROON

NARRATIVE OF THE DISCOVERY OF NEW
LANDS, ONE OF THE CHIEFS OF THE
EXPEDITION OF 1801.

TRANSLATED BY HIS HONOURABLE LORDSHIP
THE EARL OF LANSDOWN, &c. &c. &c.
WITH A HISTORY OF THE
DISCOVERY OF THE
NORTH PACIFIC OCEAN, &c. &c. &c.
BY THE SAME AUTHOR.
LONDON: PRINTED BY
J. JOHNSON, ST. PAULS CHURCH-YARD.

1801

THE
MEMOIRS AND TRAVELS
OF THE
COUNT DE BENYOWSKY.

THE Count Mauritius Augustus de Benyowsky, Magnate of the kingdoms of Hungary and Poland, was born in the year 1741 at Verbowa, the hereditary lordship of his family, situated in the county of Nittria, in Hungary. He was the son of Samuel, Count de Benyowsky, General of Cavalry, in the service of the Emperor, and Rosa, Barones of Revay, Lady and hereditary Countess of Thurocz. The early part of his life was employed in the course of education, studies and exercises which the court of Vienna affords to such of its vassals as are of illustrious families; and upon his arrival at the age of fourteen years he fixed his choice on the profession of arms. He was accordingly received into the regiment of Siebenschien, in quality of Lieutenant, and joined the Imperial army then in the field against the King of Prussia. The first battle at which he was present was that of Lobositz, on the 8th of October, 1756, under the command of General Brown; the second was that of Prague, on the 6th of May, 1757, under the Prince Charles of Lorraine; and the third was before Schweidnitz, on the 12th of November, 1757. In the following year, 1758, he had a share in the battle of Dom-

VOL. I.

B

stadt,

Stadt, under the command of General Laudon, after which period he received an invitation from his uncle, the Starost of * Bieniowsky, to repair to Poland, in order to secure the inheritance of his Starostie. He therefore quitted the Imperial service, and hastened into Lithuania, where he was acknowledged by his uncle as his heir, and succeeded him in the possession of his lands. His tranquillity was, however, interrupted by the sudden death of his father, and the intelligence he received that his brothers in law had taken possession of his inheritance. This unexpected catastrophe demanding his immediate presence in Hungary, he quitted Lithuania, with the sole view of obtaining possession of the property of his family; but on his arrival he found the whole in the hands of his brothers in law, who, by force, opposed his entrance into his own castle. In this conjuncture, attending only to the justice of his cause and the dictates of his vivacity, he repaired to Krussowa, a lordship dependant on the castle of Verbowa, where, after having caused himself to be acknowledged by his vassals, and being assured of their fidelity, he armed them, and by their assistance gained possession of all his effects. His brothers in law, thus defeated in their usurpation, adopted the most atrocious expedient to compleat his ruin. For this purpose, they represented him at the court of Vienna as a rebel and disturber of the public peace; in consequence of which false information the Empress Queen issued a decree in Chancery against the Count, who was, by that means, not only deprived of his property, but compelled to withdraw, with the utmost expedition, into Poland. It was in vain that he transmitted many memorials from Poland, tending to justify his conduct; as his enemies suppressed them, and continued firm in the usurpation of his property.

* Thus spelled in the manuscript, after the Polish manner.

This disgrace, added to the efforts of a disposition naturally active, made him determine to travel; so that after establishing his estate in Lithuania in proper hands, he repaired to Dantzick, with the intention of applying himself to navigation, and made several voyages to Hamburgh, and from thence to Amsterdam and to Plymouth. He was on the point of making a voyage to the East Indies in the year 1767, when he received several letters from the Magnates and Senators of Poland, which engaged him to return thither, in order to join in the confederation then forming. The personal regard he entertained for many of the nobility of that kingdom, added to the justice of their cause, and the consideration of his own peculiar interests, induced him to comply with the earnest solicitations of his friends. He accordingly arrived at Warsaw in the month of July, where he entered into an obligation upon oath with the chiefs of the confederacy, to the following effect:—

1. That he acknowledged the confederation as the only lawful tribunal of the republic, and that he would pay obedience only to the orders issued from its council.

2. That he would not acknowledge the King until the confederation should have declared him lawfully elected.

3. That he would join the confederation, on the first notice, where they should determine to assemble, to oppose the Russians by force of arms; and that he would not forsake the colours of the confederation so long as the Russians should remain in Poland.

4. That he would faithfully obey all the orders of the council or generality of the confederation.

In the month of December he left Warsaw, with the design of endeavouring to make his rights known at the court of Vienna, but being at length deprived

of every hope of justice, he was obliged to return into Poland. Being thus unjustly deprived of a considerable fortune in Hungary, without the smallest expectation of recovering it, he determined to quit for ever the dominions of the house of Austria. During his passage through the county of Zips, he was attacked by a violent fever, which obliged him to interrupt his journey. On this occasion he received repeated marks of friendship and regard in the house of Mr. Hensky, a gentleman of distinction, and became enamoured of one of his three daughters, with whom he soon after had the pleasure to be united by marriage.

In this state he found himself in the possession of happiness and tranquillity; but it was not his fate to continue long in possession of repose. The confederate states of Poland, a party of whom had declared themselves at Cracow, taking notice that the Count de Benyowsky was one of the first who had signed their union at Warsaw, wrote to him to join them. Their pressing solicitations would have been ineffectual, if he had not been acted on by a stronger tie. His oath compelled him to go. He therefore departed without informing his spouse, and repaired to Cracow, where he arrived on the very day the Count Panin made the assault. He was received with open arms by the Marshal Czarnesky, and was immediately appointed Colonel-General, Commander of Cavalry, and Quarter-Master General.

On the 6th of July (1768) he was detached to Novitarg, to conduct a Polish regiment to Cracow, a commission which he performed with honour, by bringing the whole regiment, composed of six hundred men, through the camp of the enemy before the town.

The Marshal was so well satisfied with the conduct of the Count, that he prevailed on the council of the generality to appoint him Muster-Master General, a place

place for which he had a competitor in the Prince Martin de Lubomiersky, who, upon his arrival at Cracow with two thousand regular troops, was declared a member of the generality of the confederation, and Inspector-General of Cavalry.

Before the arrival of this Prince, the Count de Benyowsky had proposed to the Marshal an expedition to seize the fortress of Landseron with the Polish regiment in the service of the Crown, which was quartered in that province. The Prince de Lubomiersky, on hearing of this proposal, thought the enterprise easy, and undertook it himself. Without acquainting the Count, he therefore gave orders to his cavalry to proceed, and it was not till after his departure that the Marshal Czarnesky informed him of this attempt. The Count de Benyowsky did not hesitate to assure the Marshal that the Prince would be defeated by the Russians before he had proceeded half the way, and that there was no other remedy than to send the rest of the cavalry, without delay, to charge the Russians at the instant of their attack on the Prince. Unfortunately, the Marshal was long in deciding; so that it was not till the second day after the departure of the Prince that the Count de Benyowsky received orders to march, with fourteen hundred cavalry, to support him. In consequence of this delay the Count, notwithstanding his utmost diligence, did not arrive at Kremenka till six hours after the defeat of the Prince. However, he had the good fortune to find the Russians on the spot, not expecting any attack. Upon the information he had received from his spies of their position and their negligence, he attacked and defeated them, and retook two hundred men, who had been made prisoners, of the party of the Prince Lubomiersky.

After this manoeuvre he himself formed the project of carrying the attempt upon Landseron into execution.

execution. On his march towards that fortress he was so fortunate as to meet with several bodies of the Prince de Lubomiersky's troops, which reinforced his own. At length he arrived before the fortress, where he summoned the troops of the Crown to surrender themselves prisoners, and to put him in possession of the place; which he had the satisfaction of seeing performed in the space of an hour's time. His first proceeding was to engage the new troops under their oath of fidelity, in the service of the confederation; after which he dispatched a courier to the Prince Lubomiersky, (who, since his defeat, had taken refuge in Hungary, without troops or friends,) to acquaint him with his success, and invite him to resume his command. But two days afterwards, having received undoubted information that the Russian General, Count Apraxin, was on his march to invest Cracow, he judged it indispensably necessary to hasten to the defence of that place; and as he foresaw that a town of that magnitude could not be defended unless it were well supplied with provisions, he laid the districts of Bielsz, Landscron, and Novitarg, under contribution, and obtained eighty carriages of grain, with six hundred oxen.

With this convoy he quitted Landscron, and marched towards Cracow. On his arrival at Wielicka, a town famous for its salt-works, he met a party of Russians, which he attacked and defeated, taking thirty prisoners, and the sum of nine hundred and eighty thousand Polish florins, being the King's revenue from the salt-works. In the night of the 29th of July he came to the passage of the Vistula, from whence he dispatched an officer to inform the Marshal Czarnesky of his return, requesting that the gates might be opened, to admit his party into the town without being discovered by the Russians. The Marshal, who was not acquainted with the particulars

particulars of the enterprize of the Count, but had heard by report that he was defeated and slain, was overjoyed at his return, and he entered the city with four thousand cavalry, a large sum of money, and a supply of provisions.

Immediately after the arrival of the Count, he proposed to the Marshal to establish a camp without the town; representing to him, that their numerous cavalry would exhaust their magazines without being of any utility. In support of this proposal he observed, that the greatest advantages would be derived from an entrenched camp, as it would facilitate the junction of several parties of the nobility, who durst not declare themselves in favor of the confederation, because they saw no force to support them against the Russians. The representations of the Count did not, however, prevail with the council of the confederation. Orders were given to shut and barricade the gates of the town, including all the troops, whose number amounted to thirteen thousand men. General Apraxin approached every day nearer the town, and laid the surrounding country desolate, so that it could no longer afford any subsistence to the besieged. Provisions, by this means, becoming very scarce and dear, the Count again proposed to the Marshal to permit him to sally out with a party of two thousand cavalry, in hopes that with this troop he might throw some provisions into the town, and perhaps cause the Russian General to raise the siege. The council of the generality accepted this proposal, and permitted him to leave the city on the 23d of July, when he passed out at the gate of the Vistula, and swam his troops across the river, every other passage being shut up.

As soon as he had gained the open country he dispatched several officers to engage the nobility to join him, and furnish subsistence for the besieged town.

town. As early as the 8th of August he found himself at the head of near five thousand horse and a good number of carriages, loaded with provisions, drawn by oxen, which were likewise intended to make part of the subsistence. On the 7th of August he repaired to the passage of the Vistula; but finding it occupied by the Russians, he retreated towards Wielicka, for the greater certainty of introducing the supplies into the town; and, as he concluded that the best method of insuring success would be to attack the Russians on one side, in order to facilitate the passage on the other, he accordingly marched on the 10th of the same month, with three thousand horse, directly to the enemy's camp, leaving the convoy of provisions under the command of the Baron de Klusewsky, Colonel of Infantry, with orders to take advantage of the moment of the attack to enter the town. At three o'clock in the morning the Count, in person, attacked the Russian camp, and compelled General Apraxin to collect all his troops to oppose him, by which means a passage was left for the Baron de Klusewsky: At eight o'clock the Count, being convinced that his supplies had entered Cracow, made a precipitate retreat, after having lost above sixteen hundred men. The Russian cavalry, composed of Cossacks and Hussars, pursued the Count, who, in his retreat, had the misfortune to have his horse killed under him, and, after receiving two wounds, he himself fell at last into the hands of the enemy.

The Russian General, being informed of the successful manœuvre of the Count, was impressed with a very high opinion of him, and proposed to the Count to enter into the service of his sovereign; an offer which was rejected with disdain. He was, therefore, on the point of being sent with the other prisoners to Kiovia, where his friends ransomed him for two thousand ducats, which are equivalent to
twenty.

COUNT DE BENYOWSKY.

twenty-two thousand French livres.* Being thus set at liberty, he considered himself as dispensed from his parole which he had given to the Russians; it being an incontestable truth, that a man who purchases the use of his faculties has a right to apply them to any use he may find necessary for his welfare. By virtue of this indubitable right, the Count again entered Cracow, and was received with the most perfect satisfaction by the whole confederacy.

At the first council of war which was held, he represented to the generality, that the town being no longer able to hold out, it became an object of the utmost consequence to secure another place of retreat. He therefore proposed to the council to appoint him to seize the castle of Lublau, situated on the frontier of Hungary. This project was approved of by the council, and the execution was committed to the charge of the Count, who on the 22d quitted the town of Cracow, a body of six hundred horse being appointed to follow him. On his arrival on the frontier he used every exertion to obtain the intelligence necessary to insure success to his enterprize. He even ventured to visit the commanding officer of the castle, who was not apprehensive of the least danger. After a few visits he had the address to engage more than half the garrison, by oath, in the interest of the confederation, and he only waited for the appearance of the detachment from Cracow. But it unfortunately happened that the commander of that body was so indiscreet as to divulge the purpose to which it was destined; so that the news arrived at the castle of Lublau before the troops, and the Count de Benyowsky, who waited in readiness in the town of Georgenburg, near the castle, was seized, and carried into that fortress. The precaution he had taken of remaining

* Or £.962 sterling.

in Hungary did not save him from the danger, because the commandant of Leutsch, an Imperial town, had permitted the foreign troops to pass into Hungary, contrary to the rights of his sovereign. The commanding officer of the castle treated the Count with the greatest indignity, and, pursuant to his order, sent him to General Apraxin at Cracow, who had taken possession of that town during the absence of the Count. It fortunately happened, however, that, in the passage from Novitarg, a troop of two hundred confederates, whose commanding officer knew the uniform of the troops who were conducting the Count, met them and rescued him out of their hands. As soon as the officer recognized the Count de Benyowsky, he surrendered his command to him. With this small force he marched towards Lublin, a town where the rest of the confederation of Cracow had appointed to meet, in order to join those of Bar. On his arrival near Lublin he sent an intelligent officer to enquire whether the Russians were still at a distance, and whether any part of the confederation had already repaired to Lublin. The officer, on his return, acquainted him, that he had found a party of the confederates in Lublin, commanded by M. Derzanowsky, who was then busied in engaging the nobility of that palatinate to declare themselves in favour of the confederation; but that he had likewise been informed that the Russians were advancing, by forced marches, to dislodge the confederates from that town. This news caused the Count de Benyowsky to abandon his design of entering Lublin, instead of which he proceeded to Spicza, where he met a body of the confederates, who joined his party. From Spicza he published several manifestos, in which he exhorted the nobility to join him, fixing the rendezvous at Zamosc, to which place he directed his march.

On

On his arrival at Krasnoslaw he learned, that a party of the confederates, who had retired to Chelm, was in danger of being attacked by a body of Russians, composed of one battalion of infantry, eight hundred Cossacks, and four hundred Hussars. He instantly determined to hasten to their assistance, and marched the whole night between the 17th and 18th of October, 1768. His arrival was almost immediately after that of the Russians, whose cavalry had begun to spread over the suburbs. He attacked and dislodged them, and upon entering the town he proposed to Colonel Suhalsky, whom he found with four hundred horse in the great square, to leave the town and attack the Russians. This being resolved on, the Count marched out with his whole troop, pretending to fly, in order to detach the enemy's cavalry from their infantry. He had the good fortune by this means to draw them two leagues from Chelm, when perceiving them at a considerable distance from their infantry, he faced about and briskly attacked them. The Cossacks were thrown into confusion at the first charge, and the Hussars, after sustaining the shock, endeavoured to retreat towards their infantry; on the arrival of which the Count, whose force consisted entirely of cavalry, retired with the loss of one hundred and six men, the enemy not daring to pursue him. The affair being thus terminated, the Count returned to Krasnoslaw, where he had the satisfaction to meet a party of three hundred infantry, sent by the nobility of the palatinate of Sandomir, to the assistance of Bar, the city from whence the general confederation took its name. After the addition of this troop he found himself at the head of two thousand men, in want only of field pieces and ammunition.

Before he quitted Krasnoslaw he assembled a council, in which it was determined to repair to Zamosc, and take possession of the town, in order

to

to procure the necessary supplies of arms, money, and ammunition. On the 28th of October the Count encamped in the suburbs of the town, and summoned the commandant of the town to pay the contribution of three thousand ducats, arms for two thousand infantry, four field pieces, four thousand pounds of gunpowder, and six thousand pounds of lead. On the 27th, having received nearly the whole of his demand, he quitted Zamosc, with the intention of repairing to Belcz, in order to encourage the nobility of that palatinate to declare in favour of the confederation.

Upon his arrival at Grodeck he judged it proper to remain some time, in expectation of the parties which the nobility of the palatinate of Lublin might send to him. Between the 6th and 10th of November he was joined by seven hundred and forty-three horsemen, and one hundred and forty fantassins, whereupon, judging himself sufficiently strong to appear before Belcz, he quitted Grodeck on the 12th, on his march towards that place. As he was passing through the village of Lelki he met an officer with dispatches from General Vitt, commander at Kamieniecz, to the King. This officer, who was compelled to deliver his packet, informed them, that a Russian party was then in the field, for the express purpose of pursuing and destroying the confederated forces under his command, and that the Russian General had set a price upon his head. After this information, and from the particulars contained in the dispatches, he changed his design, and instead of repairing to Belcz himself, he sent no more than a detachment of six hundred horse to that place, commanded by Colonel Suhalsky, to lay the town under contribution. The Count passed, with the greatest part of his force, to Sokal, a town not far from Belcz, where he waited the return of his spies. One of them arrived in the night of the 20th, from whom he received information, that a
corps

corps of Russians, joined by a regiment of Polanders in the service of the King, were marching hastily to surprize the Count, who they supposed to be in Belcz with his whole force. At day-break he dispatched an order to his officer in command at Belcz to march out of the town in the night of the 21st, and proceed towards the village of Lelki to meet the Russians, and engage them to pursue him. He expressly ordered him to retreat towards Sokal, and not to face about till he arrived on the banks of the river in the way to Sokal. After forwarding these orders the Count quitted Sokal the 21st of December, and placed his infantry, with four pieces of cannon, in ambuscade in a wood by the side of the road, while he himself, with his cavalry, remained concealed behind an eminence nearer to Lelki. In this disposition he passed the whole day and part of the night, in expectation of the event, frequently sending detachments towards Lelki to observe the enemy. His officers returned every hour with information, and at length the long expected hour arrived in which he received notice that the detachment from Belcz had met the corps of Russians, was immediately attacked by them, and that the confederate party would very soon pass by his post. In fact, the Count heard several discharges of fire-arms, and quickly after he saw Colonel Suhalsky retire towards Sokal, pursued by the Russians. He suffered both to pass until Suhalsky had proceeded beyond the wood where the confederate infantry was in ambush. These began a smart fire on the Russians, who instantly halted, and afterwards retreated towards the mountain, behind which the Count lay concealed, out of the reach of cannon-shot. The Russians drew up in order of battle to receive the shock of Colonel Suhalsky's party, who came upon them, supported by the infantry, out of the ambuscade. As soon

as the first fire had began, the Count rushed upon the enemy's right flank, which being forced to give way, fell upon the centre in the greatest disorder. The Russians, nevertheless, fought with desperate valour as long as their ammunition lasted; but at length being compelled to yield to force, they surrendered themselves prisoners, to the number of four hundred men, being the remainder of a party of three thousand.

After this happy termination, the Count, surprized to find no cannon with the enemy's infantry, was informed that the Russian commander, General Ismailow, having perceived that the corps of Colonel Suhalsky was only a detachment, had concluded that the Count himself remained at Belcz; for which reason he sent only the cavalry, with six companies of chasseurs, on the pursuit, and had himself, with four battalions, six pieces of cannon, ten squadrons of Hussars, and a Polish regiment of cavalry, proceeded to Belcz, with the intention of destroying the Count's party. In order therefore to obtain the best information of the designs of this General, the Count de Benyowsky dispatched a Polish Captain, M. Ribniczki, to make the necessary enquiries, and, if possible, to bring the Polish regiment over to the side of the confederation.

After the departure of this emissary the Count retired with his troops towards Mosty, a town situate among the mountains of black Russia, about sixteen leagues from the field of battle, where he remained till the 27th of the month. On the 28th about noon he was informed that a body of troops were seen on the heights, marching with their colours flying. He immediately ordered his forces to move, and march towards them, with a determination to give them a warm reception; but he was soon agreeably undeceived by the arrival of a Polish officer, whom

whom he perceived to be his emissary, and who informed him that the troops then on their march towards him consisted of four squadrons of Polish cavalry, who having quitted the Russian service, were desirous of joining the confederation. The usual oath was therefore administered to them, after which the Count resolved to proceed to Bar, in order to give an account of his proceedings to the generality of the confederation, and to dispose of his prisoners. But the following day, having received information of the taking of Bar, and the retreat of the Count de Potoczky towards the frontier of Turkey, he was desirous of joining him, and would have carried his purpose into effect, if he had not been solicited by the nobility of the palatinate of Lemberg, who sent several deputies to request him to approach their town, and support them in declaring for the confederation. He therefore marched towards Lemberg on the 4th of December, and levied a contribution in that city, but was joined by no more than fifty horsemen. From Lemberg he sent a party to Brody, to raise some money, and himself marched towards the Dnieister. On the 14th he met at Zawalow a party of the confederates of the corps under the Count de Pulauzky, from whom he learned the whole of the misfortunes the confederation had suffered, the taking of Bar, the defeat of Count Potoczky at Podhayze, and the imprisonment of the old Marshal Pulauzky: but the event which most sensibly affected him was the design of the two sons of the Marshal Pulauzky, who, seeing their father imprisoned, were desirous of quitting the army of the confederation.

All these circumstances determined the Count to repair to Zuaniecz on the 21st. The young Counts Pulauzky, his old friends, received him with the greatest joy, as a friend capable of assisting in their enterprizes, and on the following day he was proclaimed Commandant-General of Cavalry, and installed

stalled in quality of Commander in Chief at Zuaniecz, a place which the elder son of the Count Pulauzky ceded to him on account of the confidence he reposed in his experience. Immediately after the arrival of the Count a change was made in the discipline of the troops of the confederates. They were better provided, and subordination more strictly attended to. And as the rigour of the season seemed to forbid the approach of the Russians, the Count availed himself of the time to stock the two fortresses of Zuaniecz and Okopp with provision, in the latter of which the younger Count Pulauzky commanded in person. He likewise used every exertion to reconcile the Counts Potoczky and Krasinzky with the Marshal Pulauzky. But this interposition had nearly proved unfortunate to the Count Benyowsky himself; for the Count Potoesky, suspecting him of an intention of releasing the Marshal Pulauzky by open force, had proceeded so far even as to issue orders to arrest the Count de Benyowsky. The latter, however, having received information of the proceeding, quitted the camp and retired to Zuaniecz, where he connected himself still more intimately than before with the two sons of the Marshal de Pulauzky.

On the 29th of December the Count received advice of the departure of the Count Potoczky, with his troops, for Bender. He saw clearly that this disunion between the two confederate parties would destroy their force; and for that reason he advised the Count de Pulauzky to write to the Counts Potoczky and Krasinzky, to represent to them the numerous dangers to which they would expose many parts of the confederation, by separating from them; that, on the contrary, it was absolutely necessary to re-enter Poland with a considerable body of Turks to encourage and support the nobility in taking up arms in favour of the confederation,

federation, which they might easily do by sacrificing their private interests to the general good of the republic. But the Count Potoczky, listening only to the suggestions of his ambition, and flattered by the distinction he met with among the Turks, persisted in the design of not quitting the Turkish army, in which he likewise prevailed on the Count de Krasinzky to concur.

This precipitate departure of the Counts Potoczky and Krasinzky, and the distance of the Turkish army near Bender, entirely disconcerted the two confederate parties, composed of seven thousand eight hundred men, one half of whom were commanded by Count Casimir Pulauzky at Okopp, and the other by the Count de Benyowsky at Zuaniecz. These two chiefs, in order to keep their troops in spirits, and likewise to answer the essential purposes of the confederation, took into their pay three thousand Lipky, a kind of light Turkish cavalry, and after having put the fortresses into a state of defence, they established two camps between Zuaniecz and Okopp.

Such was their position on the 22d of January, 1769. On the 24th they received advice that a Russian corps, commanded by General Ismailow, was established at Constantinow, in Wolnia, and that another corps, under the command of General Kretsetnikow, had fixed their quarters at Lemberg. Hence they concluded that the Russians designed to molest them by their light troops till the expected arrival of General Galitzin with his army. To prevent this, their first care was directed to the preservation of the fortresses of Zuaniecz and Okopp, after which they raised their camp to march towards the enemy. The Count Pulauzky undertook to act against General Kretsetnikow, and the Count Benyowsky against General Ismailow. The latter directed his march towards Skalat, a castle and

town belonging to the Count Scipion, one of his best friends, a circumstance which, however, did not prevent him from seizing the artillery and furniture. From Skalat he marched to Viogrodeck, Lampol, and Zaczslaw, at which last place he received a reinforcement of one hundred and sixty-nine horsemen and eighty-two foot soldiers. From Zaczslaw he retired into the forest of Lackow, whence he dispatched two of his officers to reconnoitre the enemy's post at Constantinow. On their return he learned that General Ismailow was not yet arrived, but that he was continually expected, and that there was at Constantinow only a Major, commander of six companies of infantry, having with him two field pieces, four hundred Hussars, and three or four hundred Cossacks; and that the enemy was ignorant of the position of the confederates, whom they supposed still to remain in their fortresses. On this information the Count de Benyosky marched his troops the whole night between the 7th and 8th of February, and arrived before Constantinow at four in the morning. He immediately disposed his troops in order, and at five o'clock attacked them in three different places. The Russians made very little resistance, so that great numbers of them were slain, because the Turks gave no quarter, a circumstance which obliged the Count to threaten the Aga who commanded them, that if he did not put a stop to the carnage made by his troop, he would punish their cruelty on the spot. This firmness of the Count preserved the lives of many of these unfortunate men.

After having thus defeated the Russians he took possession of Constantinow, which he laid under contribution, and then proceeded to Medzibors. On the 15th he took the castle of Medzibors, the garrison consisting of sixty-eight grenadiers, with eight pieces of cannon, and a quantity of ammunition

tion and provisions. From Medzibors he passed the river Bogh, and marched towards Grodek; during which he was informed that the Russians, in conjunction with General Branicky, in the King's service, having been made acquainted with the operations and the march of the Count, had sent four thousand men, infantry and cavalry, from Bar, to pursue him. This intelligence caused him to hasten his march, and to pass the river Smotrick to the north of the castle of Felstin. On the 27th, being arrived at Satanow, he was informed that the Count Pulauzky, not having succeeded against Lemberg, had attempted to dislodge several parties of Russians in the vicinity of that place, three of which he had defeated; but that having received advices of the greatest consequence, he had retreated towards Zuaniecz, in hopes of joining the Count. On the 27th the Count Benyowsky quitted Satanow, and marched towards Grodek, and as he was passing through the village of Ostokopia he met several carriages filled with wounded men, from whom he learnt that the Count Pulauzky had maintained a very sharp action with the Russians near the river Srebovicza, and had retired towards Grodek, the Russians not thinking proper to pursue him.

In consequence of this information the Count halted to refresh his troops, and after marching all night he arrived about day-break before Grodek, where the Count Pulauzky, hearing of his arrival, met him, and conducted him into the town. The junction of these troops was one of those happy turns of fortune which alone can change the issue of a well-conducted enterprize, such as was that of General Ismailow, who, since the affair at Constantinow, had sought the Count Benyowsky without being able to join him. The Russian commander, upon the information that the Count Pu-

lauzky was at Grodek with three thousand men, determined to surround him, and would certainly have done it, if the arrival of the Count, with his corps of four thousand three hundred men, had not intervened and prevented it.

On the 28th, in the evening, the confederate detachment announced the approach of the Russians, who were on their march, to the number of ten thousand, in two columns.

On the 1st of March, at seven in the morning, they were at no greater distance from the city than one league, when the Count de Pulauzky presented himself in opposition to them in the order of battle, with twenty-eight companies of infantry, supported by six pieces of cannon, with the Turkish and Polish cavalry on each wing. At nine o'clock the action began, by an attack made by the Russian cavalry upon the left wing of the confederates, which was compelled to give way. The center was at the same time charged by the enemy's infantry along its whole front, which likewise engaged their left: at this moment the Count de Benyowsky marched his whole infantry to support the left wing of the Count de Pulauzky, and himself, at the head of his cavalry, rushed on the enemy's right flank, who were not in the least expectation of this manœuvre. The Russian General then divided his center to support his wings, but the enemy's Cossacks, who were overthrown, prevented the infantry from obeying their orders. The consequence was, that the latter were thrown into the utmost confusion, and compelled to make a precipitate retreat, with the loss of their carriages and artillery. This affair cost the Russians near twelve hundred men slain, and as many taken prisoners; but the killed and wounded of the confederates did not exceed nine hundred.

On the 2d of March the two Counts quitted the town of Grodek, and marched towards Zuaniecz with

with the intention of calling a council of war to decide ultimately on the measures to be pursued. On the 7th, on a spot between Zuaniecz and Okopp, they divided their troops in order to lead them into those fortresses, to repose themselves, after the fatigues they had undergone.

A council of war was held on the 8th, at which the Generals Laurent, Potoczky, Grocholzky, Radziminsky, Slabuserky, Noviczy, and other commanders of the troops of the republic attached to the confederation were present. The two Counts, persuaded that the Russian army waited only the return of spring to make their approach to the Turkish frontier, represented to the council, that it would be prudent to determine to quit the two posts of Zuaniecz and Okopp, and return into Poland. The reasons they offered were, 1. That while they remained on the frontier of Turkey, the Russians would keep them separated from Poland, and consequently that the palatinates would never dare to declare for the confederation, because unsupported by any military force. 2. That they themselves would likewise continue unable to draw any supply either of subsistence or recruits from Poland, to reinstate their daily losses. 3. Lastly, That the two fortresses of Zuaniecz and Okopp could never hold out against an army. These remonstrances had no effect on the Council, which obstinately persisted in the resolution of preserving the two fortresses; and for that purpose they determined to send one deputy to the Counts Potoczky and Krazinzky to request supplies of men and money, and another to Constantinople to solicit the same supplies from the Grand Signior. It was in vain that the Counts Pulauzky and Benyowsky represented, that before the return of their deputies the Russians would attack them, and put it

it out of their power to abandon their present posts ; for the council still adhered to their resolution.

On the 10th a foraging party brought word, that they had discovered a numerous troop of the enemy's cavalry at Korolouka. The Council immediately ordered a detachment to the pursuit. The Count himself took charge of this expedition ; but instead of the enemy he met a party of six hundred confederates, who had formerly served under the Prince Lubomiersky. On the 12th, in the morning, advice was received by the Count, that General Vitt had caused seven hundred men to march out of Kamieniecz Podolsky, to take their position before Zuaniecz. The Council being informed of this, gave orders to the Count to make the necessary dispositions to prevent their making a lodgment, which he did by presenting himself before them with eight squadrons of cavalry. Upon his approach he learned that General Vitt had sent this detachment only for the purpose of receiving a Russian courier from Constantinople, who was to be put into their hands by a Turkish detachment from Chotym. On this information the Count de Benyowsky acquainted the officer, that the Turks had confidence enough in the confederation to pass the man in question through their hands, concerning whose fate it was totally unnecessary for General Vitt to give himself any trouble ; who, having consulted his own vanity in sending his detachment, might probably find reasons to repent the proceeding. This answer was followed by an order to the officer to withdraw instantly with his party, or stand on his defence. The royalist officer retired without delay, and returned to Kamieniecz ; and the Count, on his part, retired to Zuaniecz, where he found the Russian courier arrived, and received him in charge from the Turks to be conducted to Kamieniecz.

In

In the night of the 15th the Count received a courier from the Count Pulauzky, informing him, that the latter having issued out of Okopp with a detachment of troops, on his march towards Oucze, was attacked by the Russians, and obliged to retreat towards Grodek, a village to which he had been invited to come. The Count Benyowsky immediately marched a part of his cavalry with the utmost expedition to his assistance; but though he traversed sixteen leagues in fourteen hours, he did not arrive till after the action, which, contrary to all expectation, had terminated in favor of the confederates, though the Count Pulauzky had no more than four hundred men with him to oppose a body of fourteen hundred. The prisoners taken in this engagement affirmed that the Russian party had been sent out to reconnoitre the ground, and take some prisoners, in order to obtain information respecting the positions of the fortresses Zuaniecz and Okopp. They also informed the Count that General Ismailow intended in a short time to attack those fortresses with twelve thousand men appointed for the enterprize.

On the 18th, upon his return to Zuaniecz, the Count communicated this news to the council, which was also confirmed by a Polish officer who deserted from Kamieniecz to join the confederation. On the 21st the Count de Benyowsky having received fresh advices of the approach of the enemy, engaged the Count Pulauzky to quit the fortress of Okopp, as being incapable of maintaining a siege; but the council refused to consent to the evacuation of that place; and at last, on the 22d and 23d, being assured that General Ismailow was at no greater distance than three leagues from Zuaniecz, they gave up all their hopes. The members of the council then deliberated only on the best means of securing themselves individually, and one after another
they

they quitted the fortrefs to retire into Turkey, taking with them all the Russian prisoners. This proceeding consequently left the whole disposition of affairs in the hands of the Count de Benyowsky.

On the 24th, in the morning the Count beheld from the fortress the enemy's columns following each other, and separating at the village of Havrilouka; whence he conjectured that they intended to attack the two fortresses of Zuaniecz and Okopp at the same time, a circumstance in which he was not deceived. On the same day about noon the Count fired several eight pounders at the enemy, loaded with only one third of their usual charge. The balls of course not reaching the enemy, they concluded that they might, with impunity, approach still nearer the fortress, which they did the same day, and began to work on the erection of batteries. On the 25th the Russians began to fire on the castle, and continued their cannonade till the close of the day, without receiving any effectual return; but in the night between the 25th and 26th the Count, after having given orders to the commanding officer under him to fire on the enemy at day-break with his heaviest artillery, sallied out of the castle by the gate of Ottaky, which leads towards the Dneister, with two thousand horse, and passing through Brahy, he made the entire circuit of the Russian camp, so that he found himself by day-break at their backs. At this instant the artillery from the castle began a very heavy and destructive fire on the enemy's camp, which was within half cannon shot of the place. Their troops, who could not rally without being exposed to the fire which swept their ranks, were quickly thrown into the utmost confusion, which was greatly increased by the sudden violence of the cavalry of the Count, who rushed upon them, and forced them, at last, to quit the camp and baggage, and fly with precipitation towards

wards Grodek. Their terror was such, that they did not stop till at the distance of six leagues from Zuaniecz, and on this occasion they lost eleven hundred slain, and three hundred and twenty-eight prisoners, with two pair of colours, three standards, and eighteen pieces of cannon.

After the deliverance of Zuaniecz, the Count, desirous of assisting his companion, the Count de Pulauzky, at Okopp, marched immediately towards that fortress; but on his arrival he found it in ashes, and entirely abandoned, except by the dying and the dead. Some of the former acquainted the Count, that the Count de Pulauzky, seeing the impossibility of maintaining the place, had himself, after repelling three assaults, set fire to the town and castle, and immediately afterwards sallied out, with the intention of forcing a passage through the enemy's camp to join the Count de Benyowsky; but that their knowledge of the subsequent adventures of their intrepid chief extended no farther.

The Count, after having seen the wounded placed in proper carriages, returned to Zuaniecz. On the 29th he received a letter from the Count de Pulauzky, who informed him, that not having been able to form a passage towards Zuaniecz, in his sally out of Okopp, he had passed the Dneister, and directing his march through Moldavia, he had happily arrived at Zombor, whence he proposed to join the party of confederates at Sandomir in expectation of the arrival of the Count, whom he advised to quit Zuaniecz and immediately retire into Turkey, in order to march freely through Moldavia on the frontiers of Hungary, where he would himself wait for him in the neighbourhood of Zombor. The Count communicated this letter to all the commanders under him, and determined with them to adopt the measures proposed by the Count Pulauzky.

In

In consequence of this decision he sent two of his officers to the Bacha of Chotym, to inform him of his intention, and to request the necessary assistance to facilitate his passage. The Bacha acquiesced in all his demands, and promised the indispensable assistance required by the Count. Orders were therefore immediately given to forward the equipages to Otaky, a village situated near Chotym; and on the 30th he evacuated Zuaniecz and marched to Braha, a Polish village on the bank of the Dniester, opposite Chotym, and under the cannon of that fortress. Nothing now remained but to pass the river; but just as the Count was about to form a bridge, the Bacha sent him word that he durst by no means permit the establishment of a bridge across the river without express orders of the Grand Signior; and moreover, that, upon reflection, he did not think proper to venture to receive the Count and his troops till instructions should arrive from Stamboul*.

This message threw the Count into the utmost embarrassment. For as he had evacuated Zuaniecz, he found himself exposed to the danger of being surrounded on the first occasion by the Russians, who, having the Bacha of Chotym in their interests, might easily, and without danger, attack the Count whenever they pleased. On the 6th of April the Russians took possession of Zuaniecz, and detached a party for the purpose of entirely destroying the Count and his troops. In the night between the 7th and 8th he was attacked at Braha, by four thousand men, but the precipitation of the Russian General saved the Count. The enemy's cavalry preceded their infantry, and first entered the village, where they were very ill treated by two batteries

* i. e. Constantinople.

the Count had constructed upon a small eminence. Being thus forced to give way, they stopped the passage of their infantry, which descended the mountain of Braha; and as every shot of the batteries took effect, the Count had the good fortune to repel them. Nevertheless, as he was by no means desirous of a second visit, he quitted Braha on the 8th, and marched to Kitaygrod, where he laid a bridge across the Dniester, and entered Turkey in spite of the prohibition and menaces of the Bacha. He then passed through Mesava, and repaired to Stadienieza near Chotym, where he pitched his tents near the camp of the Bacha of Natolia, intending to rest his troops for a short space, and to settle upon the measures necessary to be adopted in facilitating his march through Moldavia.

On the 10th he received an order from the Bacha of Chotym to raise his camp, and leave the dominions of the Grand Signior without delay; and this order was attended with the threat, that on the least sign of resistance he would cause all the confederates to be cut in pieces. The Count returned for answer, that as the Grand Signior had granted his protection to the confederates of the republic, of which he was a member, it was with the greatest surprize that he beheld the conduct of the Bacha, who had already forfeited his word, by promising him every assistance, which he had basely departed from when he forbid him to pass the river at Braha, and by that means exposed him to the mercy of the Russians; that there was no occasion for other proofs to convince him of the bad faith of the Bacha, who had sold his services to the Russians; and that he feared not his threats, because he was well assured that the brave men he commanded would not execute a commission so base as that of cutting off the troops of the friends and allies of the Grand Signior, who had taken refuge in his dominions.

After

After dispatching this answer, the Count waited upon the Bacha of Natolia, who was encamped near him, and to whom he communicated every particular of the conduct of the Bacha of Chotym, at the same time that he requested his assistance against the violence of that traitor. The Bacha of Natolia, who was secretly the enemy of the Bacha of Chotym, promised the Count his assistance, and advised him to send a courier to Stamboul to acquaint the Grand Signior with the behaviour of the commander at Chotym, which the Count accordingly did the same day. On the 11th in the evening the Bacha of Chotym sent an Aga of the Janizaries to the Bacha of Natolia, with orders to secure the person of the Count, and send him to Chotym to be punished for his insolence. But the Bacha of Natolia kept his promise to the Count, by sending an answer to the effect, that the Count, having sent a clauz or courier to Stamboul, was entitled by the laws to an asylum till the return of the firman of the Grand Signior; and that as his person was safe in his hands, the Bacha of Chotym need not doubt his security, though he refused to put him into his without an express order from the Grand Signior. After the departure of the Aga, the Bacha of Natolia advised the Count to raise his camp, and retire, lest the Bacha of Chotym might avenge himself by treachery: and this generous Turk, not content with shewing the Count every mark of friendship during his short stay, detached likewise with him a body of one thousand horse, to accompany him to the frontiers of Poland.

On the 14th, the Count raised his camp, and marched towards Cserniowcze, the residence of the Hospodar, at which place he arrived on the 16th, and from thence dispatched several of his officers to convey his baggage from Chotym; but these, on their return, informed him, that the Bacha had seized

seized the whole. Thus plundered by his allies, he marched towards Avriloveze, where he dismissed the Turkish Spahis, and passed, at length, to Zadbolicze, in Poland, preferring the chance of war, though in a hazardous position, to the base treatment he had received from his allies.

On the 18th, after having refreshed his troops, which consisted of about three thousand nine hundred men, he proposed to march towards Zombar to join the Count Pulauzky, but many of the Commanders refused to follow him, and left him to the number fourteen hundred horse; refusing even to take charge of the sick and wounded, the conveyance of whom greatly incommoded the Count. He forced his march along the river Pruth as far as Dobrilow, where he arrived on the 26th. From Dobrilow he marched towards Oriow, and thence to Dorchovicz, which is situated in a valley between the Carpathian mountains. On the 5th of May he sent an officer from Dorchovicz to Zambor to procure intelligence of the Count Pulauzky; and on the 9th his messenger returned with the news that Count Pulauzky had retired into Hungary, and that the Russians were there under the command of Colonel Brincken, who being apprized of the approach of the Count, had determined to seek him. The Count, being sensible from this advice of his extreme danger, which he could not avoid as he was shut in by his enemies, proposed to his troops to enter Hungary, and there wait for a favourable opportunity to enter Poland, in junction with the Count de Pulauzky. But they refused to follow him, because they consisted, for the most part, of deserters from the Imperial forces, who durst not return into the Emperor's dominions. In this distressing situation he had no other alternative but to retire into the forest of Zyduczow, which he immediately put in execution. And Colonel Brincken would certainly

tainly have missed him, if he had not received advice of his retreat by a deserter who left the Count at the passage of Kippa, in the forest of Zyduczow.

The Russian Colonel, judging that the Count was marching towards Stry to join the confederate parties at Sanok, likewise hastened his march, and arrived thither half a day before the Count, whose forces were weakened by fatigue and hunger. In this state he was attacked, on the 19th of May, about noon, by Colonel Brincken, at the head of four thousand men. The Count was at first compelled to give way; but on the arrival of his cannon he, in his turn, forced the Colonel to retire, who at last quitted the field, and retreated towards Stry. The advantage of the victory served only to augment the misery of the Count, who in this single action had near three hundred wounded and two hundred and sixty-eight slain, and who had no other prospect before him than either to perish by hunger with his troops in the forests, or to expose himself to be cut in pieces by the enemy. However, that he might have no cause to reproach himself, he took the advice of his officers and troops in his march towards Bialoboboky, who were unanimous to proceed to that place. The project required a speedy execution, though it was impossible to carry it into effect without first refreshing the men and horses who had just been in action. About eleven o'clock the Count resumed his march, and about ten in the morning of the 20th he arrived at the village of Szuka, where being obliged to halt for refreshment, he was surprized by a party of Cossacks, and had only time to quit the village and form his troops in order of battle on the plain, before he was attacked by the enemies cavalry, and soon after by their infantry, supported by several pieces of cannon, which caused the greatest destruction

tion among the forces of the Count. At length, in the heat of the combat, the Count, having before received two wounds with the sabre, was wounded in the body by the shot of a cannon, loaded with old iron and other destructive rubbish. His fate decided that of his party, and the Russians had at last the satisfaction of seeing him their prisoner.

Colonel Brincken, the commander of the party he had fought with, caused the Count to be conveyed to the Russian General Prince Prozorouky, who sent him to General * * * commander in chief of the army, then encamped at Tarnopol, a man equally cruel and base, who, contrary to every sentiment of humanity, insulting the misfortunes of the Count, not only forbade the surgeons to dress his wounds, but likewise, after reducing him to bread and water, loaded him with chains, and in that state transported him to Kiow. It was fortunate, however, that the wounds of the Count reduced him to a situation which persuaded his conductor that he was in danger of immediate death, and induced him, upon his arrival at Polone, to make his report to Colonel Sirkow, the commanding officer at that place, who ordered him to be carried to the hospital, where he was cured of his wounds by a French surgeon, named Blanchard; from whose report, when the Russian commander was informed that the Count was able to leave the hospital, he caused him to be lodged in the town, and advanced him fifty roubles for his subsistence.

During his stay at Polone the Count became acquainted with a Lieutenant in the Russian service, named Milck, a native of Courland, who, equally generous with his Colonel, offered him a share of the little he possessed. Thus it was, that in the lowest stage of misfortune the Count had the consolation

to

to find friends, and he already had begun to think his situation tolerable, when he at once experienced the reverse, upon the arrival of Brigadier Bannier, who relieved Colonel Sirkow in his command, and who had a strong prejudice against the Count. Immediately after the departure of the Colonel this commander caused the Count to be loaded with chains, and conducted to the dungeon with the rest of the prisoners, to whom this inhuman tyrant allowed no other subsistence than bread and water. Upon his entrance he recognized several officers and soldiers who had served under him, and their demonstrations of esteem and friendship was the only consolation he received in his distressed situation.

Twenty-two days were thus consumed in a subterraneous prison, together with eighty of his companions, without light, and even without air, except what was admitted through an aperture which communicated with the casemates. These unhappy wretches were not permitted to go out, even on their natural occasions, which produced such an infection, that thirty-five of them died in eighteen or twenty days; and such was the inhumanity and barbarity of the commander, that he suffered the dead to remain and putrify among the living. The prison was not opened till the 16th of July, which was the twenty-second of their confinement, and from thence the Count was led to the place of arms, where several bands of prisoners, all in chains, were already convened. The order was soon given for their departure for Kiow, and they began their march under the guard of a company, commanded by an ancient Captain of Infantry. The cruelty exercised by the Russian officer towards the unfortunate men under his superintendance was such as can only be imagined by a monster like himself. His brutal disposition caused him to deprive them of half their allowance
of

of bread, the value of which he converted to his own use, and he laid the villages under contribution for exempting them from providing the prisoners with lodging, at the same time that he left them exposed to the heat of the season and the rain in the open air, without tents or any shelter whatever. These unhappy men, emaciated with hunger and covered with wounds, being unable to march as fast as the commander desired, were continually beaten, and the Count himself was not excused, though unable to walk without crutches. This treatment, so infamous and shocking to humanity, caused the destruction of such a number of the prisoners, that out of seven hundred and eighty-two, which were put under his conduct at Polone, he brought no more than one hundred and forty-eight to Kiow, the rest being either dead, or abandoned in the forests in a dying state.

On the 4th of August, having at length reached Kiow, a town on the border of Russia, fortified by simple works of earth, the prisoners were again shut up in the casemates, where they experienced the same hardships as at Polone. The strength of the Count's constitution, which had hitherto enabled him to resist such an accumulation of hardships and fatigue, gave way at length, and on the 12th he was attacked with a malignant fever that quickly produced a delirium, which continued till the 8th of September. On the 10th of the same month the governor of Kiow, Count Voieikou, caused the prisoners to pass in review before himself and a commissary who was charged to take an account of the name and quality of each. The Count, whom they were obliged to carry, had not strength to answer to his name when called in his turn; whereupon the governor made enquiry respecting his state, and gave immediate orders that he should be separately lodged in a house, and that

two roubles a day should be paid him for subsistence. This treatment, by enabling the Count to procure proper diet, soon put him in a fair way of recovery. But at this crisis, unfortunately for him, an order arrived from Petersburg to send all the prisoners to Cazan, and the Count being forced to make this journey, though he was not compelled to walk, experienced a relapse, which obliged the Russian officer to leave him at Nizym, a town dependent on the government of Kiow. M. Levner, a German merchant of that place, interested himself in favour of the Count, and obtained permission of the Voywode to receive him into his house. The care and attention of this humane and generous friend restored him to health, and enabled him to appear in decent clothes. He should have thought his misfortunes greatly alleviated if he had been permitted to have remained at Nizym; but on the arrival of the second convoy of prisoners the Voywode placed him in charge of the commanding officer. His benefactor, from whom he was then forced to part, had the generosity to present him with the sum of two hundred roubles, which, for fear of being robbed by some of the Russian soldiers, he deposited in the hands of the commander, whose name was Wolkow, with a request that he would keep it for him till his arrival at Cazan. On their arrival at Tula, the Count having occasion to purchase some provisions and other necessaries, requested a few roubles of the commandant in the presence of some of the other prisoners; but the unprincipled wretch not only had the effrontery to deny his having received any money, but likewise treated the Count with the most injurious and abusive language, and from that time used every means in his power to render the rest of the journey uncomfortable to him. He even carried his malice so far, that on their arrival at Cazan he accused the
 Count

Count before the governor, Count Krasnin Samaren, of attempting to raise a revolt among the prisoners; and on this accusation he was loaded with chains and committed to prison, from which he was not delivered but at the pressing instances of the Counts Marshal Czarneczky, Potockzy, and the young Pulauzky.

After his deliverance from prison he was lodged with a goldsmith, named Vendischov, a native of Sweden, who treated him with great kindness and humanity. The reputation of the Count, and his open disposition, procured him a numerous acquaintance among the Russian nobility; and one day, being invited to dine with a man of quality, he learned, by several particulars of the conversation, that a design was projecting against the government. Some days afterwards, being invited again in the same company, one of the guests addressed him, and proposed many questions respecting the disposition of the prisoners towards Government; at the same time observing that the governor of Cazan, having no more than four hundred men in garrison, was very uneasy lest the prisoners, whose number amounted to seven thousand, should revolt, and that to prevent so dangerous an event, he had sent to Peterburgh, requesting orders to send them into Siberia. The Count immediately perceived the intention of the person who questioned him, but not thinking it prudent to enter into any conversation by which he might seem to enter into an engagement, he only replied, that the Governor, having a body of brave men under his command, who were armed and in possession of the fortrels, had nothing to fear from men worn out with disease, and for the most part actually disabled; but that he doubtless acted prudently in taking every precaution suitable to the office he held. The continuation of this discourse led the Russian at last to declare to the

Count, that the nobility of many of the governments were greatly discontented with the despotic authority of the Empress, and that, in order to deliver themselves, they were disposed to enter into a confederacy to shake off the yoke of slavery, and become as free as other nations; that the present moment was highly favourable to their designs, because the troops were employed elsewhere, and the clergy, equally discontented, were ready to join the nobility, who besides might easily gain over the Tartars of Cazan, a people naturally disposed to declare in favour of the Turks. He ended his discourse by observing that the Russian nobility likewise depended much on the assistance of the prisoners who were so unworthily treated in their misfortunes.

The Count, without any embarrassment, replied simply, that the prisoners being without arms, and always kept in sight of their guards, could not dare to make any attempt against government; but that on recovering their liberty they were disposed to shew their gratitude in the most zealous and effectual manner, and that consequently, if they were delivered from their wretched situation, no matter by whom, their deliverers might be assured of their attachment. After this conversation the Count rejoined the company, and was received with such demonstrations of friendship as convinced him that the whole party consisted of malecontents. Immediately after the company broke up, the Count waited on his old friend the Marshal Czarneczky, to whom he communicated his discovery. On the following day the Marshal invited several of the superior officers among the prisoners, and revealed the secret to them, in order that by their deliberations it might be decided what mode of proceeding they should adopt, in case they should receive any proposals on the part of the discontented nobility. It was

was accordingly determined in secret committee, that the confederates should not enter into any conspiracy against the government in conjunction with the malecontents, to whom, nevertheless, a promise might be made, that in case they should become masters of the city, the prisoners, being set at liberty, would form a body which should act in concert with their deliverers until the final orders of the generality of the confederation might arrive.

The Count de Benyowsky was entrusted with the management of this affair, which he pursued with the greatest zeal, prudence and sagacity, in such a manner as not to endanger any of the prisoners, even on the supposition that government should discover the conspiracy. The malecontents, on the other hand, entered into their pursuit with so much spirit, that they succeeded in bringing over to their party the nobility of the governments of Voronicz, Bielogorod, Kiow, and the greater part of Moscow, the capital of Russia. They only waited for the appearance of the Tartars of Cazan, who had engaged to present themselves before the town of Cazan with nine or ten thousand horse.

Such was the state of affairs on the 6th of November, (1769) when a sudden change was produced by a quarrel between two Russian lords, one of whom informed the governor, that the prisoners, in concert with the Tartars, meditated a design against his person and the garrison. This apostate accused the Count, in order to save his friends and countrymen. On the 7th, at eleven at night, the Count, not suspecting any such event, heard a knocking at his door. He came down, entirely undressed, with a candle in his hand, to enquire the cause; and upon opening his door was surprized to see an officer, with twenty soldiers, who demanded if the prisoner were at home. On his replying in the affirmative, the officer snatched the candle out of his

his hand, and ordering his men to follow him, went hastily up to the Count's apartment.

The Count immediately took advantage of the mistake, quitted his house, and repaired to the quarters of his intimate friend, Major Wynbladth, who was likewise a prisoner. After relating the adventure to him, and engaging him to make his escape together with him, they quitted Cazan, and repaired to the nearest village, where they took horses of the countrymen, with the intention of hastening to Sebukfar. On their arrival at this place they apprized several Russian gentlemen of the discovery of their plot, who having the strongest reasons to fear the consequences of the Count's being arrested, gave him a *podruschna*, or order for post horses, with money and cloathing. From Sebukfar they passed to Kufmoden Janskoy, where they took post, and continued their route as far as Nizney Novogrod, where they gave out that they were officers returning from Kizlar to Peterburgh, charged with dispatches from the governor. The Voivod had the politeness to invite them to dinner, and treated them elegantly, after which he furnished them with a letter for the Voivod of Volodömir, which was of the greatest service to them, as they certainly would have been arrested if they had not been provided with it. They still continued to urge their course, and passed through Moscow, as well as Twér, Velki-novogrod, and other places, in the night.

At length they arrived at Petersburgh on the 19th of November, where the Count took lodgings in a hotel, causing his Major to pass in the character of his valet de chambre. Upon his first going out he met a German tradesman, by profession an apothecary, who being given to understand that the Count was desirous of passing by sea into another country, directed him to the lodgings of a Dutch Captain.

The

The Count accordingly waited on the Captain, and begged him to take him and his domestic passengers, promising to pay him five hundred ducats on his arrival in Holland. The Captain agreed to receive him on board, and as he was ready to set sail the following day he appointed the Count to meet on the bridge of Neva about midnight, who accordingly attended there exactly at the time, with his companion. While they were waiting the arrival of the Captain with the utmost impatience; he at length appeared, and saluted the Count, begging that he would remain on the spot a moment, as he would quickly return, after he had finished some pressing business with his correspondent. He did not fail to return soon after, and beckoned the Count, who hastened to meet him. But at the very instant he was about to express his gratitude to the Captain, twenty soldiers seized on him, and knocked him down; after which they conducted him together with the Major, to the Count Cseferin, Lieutenant-General of the Police, who, in a very mild and polite manner, proposed the following questions to the Count:

1. He demanded the birth, country, age, and religion of the Count?

2. Under what power he had served before he became engaged in the confederation?

3. Who had persuaded him to sign the act of confederacy?

4. Whether he did not know that the court of France furnished money for the payment of the troops of the confederates?

5. Who had engaged him, being a prisoner, to excite the other prisoners to revolt, and what was his design in case he had succeeded, in getting possession of Cazan.

6. Whether the other confederate chiefs were concerned in the conspiracy or not, and whether there

there were not certain Russians engaged with him to carry this abominable plot into execution? their names, and the manner in which the engagement was brought about?

7. After deserting from Cazan, why did the prisoner repair to Peterburgh, if he had not some premeditated design? Whence had he money for making a journey of that length by post, and why did he pretend that his companion was his servant?

8. On the supposition that his design was that of quitting Russia, why did he prefer going to Holland?

The answers of the Count were,

1. That he was born Magnate of the kingdoms of Hungary and Poland, is aged twenty-eight years, and professes the Christian religion.

2. That he served in the Imperial army in quality of officer in the war against the King of Prussia.

3. That in his quality of Staroste, he thought it his duty to assist the republic in shaking off a foreign yoke.

4. That he was ignorant whether or no the court of France furnished the confederation with money.

5. That he had never excited the prisoners to revolt, his design being no other than that of recovering his own liberty; and that the tyranny and cruelty he had experienced in the prisons had forced him to this attempt; that he never had any intention of seizing the town of Cazan; and therefore he could have no further intentions consequent to the imaginary capture of that town.

6. That in quality of prisoner, it was neither necessary nor expedient that he should become an informer, and consequently that he declined answering the sixth question.

7. That after quitting Cazan he had repaired to Peterburgh, for the purpose of more easily quitting the
the

the empire by means of some foreign ships ; that as he had no other design, he had caused Major Wynbladth to pass as his domestic, that their difficulties and expences might by that means be diminished.

8. That as to his intention of repairing to Holland, he had no other motive than his having met with a Dutch Captain, who promised him his passage, and that it was, besides, of little consequence to him what country he might go to, provided it were out of the dominions of Russia.

After this examination the Count was conveyed to the fort St. Peter and St. Paul, and there confined in a subterraneous dungeon, separate from Major Wynbladth. On the 23d, in the morning, being the third day of his detention, his prison was opened for the first time, and after three days fast he received a morsel of bread and a pitcher of water. On the same day, in the evening, he was conducted by an officer and six men from his prison to the minister, Count Panin, who was in his cabinet, and who proposed an hundred questions, one after the other, without giving him time to answer, and at last shewing him several papers, from which he affirmed that he was acquainted with all the machinations of the Count, he loaded him with the harshest invectives, advising him to affirm all questions that might be asked in the council, which if he failed to do, he would find himself in a wretched situation. After this mild and friendly advice Count Panin ordered him to be re-conducted to his prison, giving directions that he should be loaded with irons.

On the 23d he was again brought forth, and conducted before the privy council. On his entrance into the place of meeting he beheld twenty Russians seated, each having a sheet of paper before him, and

and a pen in his hand. Count Panin presided at this council. The person who performed the function of procureur read all the questions which had been made by the Count Csecserin to the Count Benyowsky, and also his answers. Count Panin afterwards ordered the Count Benyowsky to swear that all these answers were conformable to truth, with which he immediately complied. After this preliminary, Count Panin required him to retract his oath, and confess the truth, otherwise he should be put to the torture. This threat, sufficiently horrid to shake the fortitude of the most innocent person, irritated the Count, who replied to the minister, that, as a judge; it ill became him to perform the office of executioner; that justice ought never to have recourse to punishment, before conviction of the accused; and that the council having proposed to the Count to purge himself by oath, it was necessary that his conviction should be founded on proofs that his oath was false, or that otherwise every violent proceeding against him would be an act of barbarity, to which he never could believe that her Majesty the Empress would give her sanction. This answer of the Count, which was written down word for word by the secretary, caused several members of the council to vindicate him against the opinion of Count Panin. These gentlemen observed, that the prisoner, having been convicted of nothing but an attempt to desert, could not be condemned as a state criminal. This observation produced a dispute between the assessors, and the Count was conducted back to his prison; from which he was again brought forth on the morning of the 25th, and conducted before the council, where he was confronted with a Russian gentleman, whom the governor of Cazan had sent to Peterburgh to be examined by the council. This wretch was the same who had accused the Count to the governor of Cazan.

He

He maintained before the council, that the Count knew of the plot which the Russians had formed against government, that he had encouraged them, and that he himself was the person who had promised the discontented party to assist them with all the prisoners. The president ordered the Count to answer this accusation, which he did, by freely affirming that he had, in several companies of the nobility, heard proposals treated of against the governor of Cazan. That these noblemen had actually made formal propositions to him, to become connected with the party of malecontents, and to engage all the prisoners in their interest: but that as his situation as a prisoner did not require him to abandon his principles and betray them, he had kept the secret; and as far as related to the propositions made to him by the malecontents, he had answered without hesitation, that the prisoners would not engage in any attempt against the government of Cazan, and still less against the interests of the Empress: That it did not become them to intermeddle in the pretensions of the Russian nobility, who alone were to decide their own quarrel, and that the prisoners would patiently suffer their fate, though the discontented nobility might depend upon their services, in the single case only that they should first set them at liberty.

The Russian himself acknowledged that this account was true; after which the Count was returned to prison till the 29th, when he was brought before the council to receive his final judgment. At the commencement of this sitting the president threatened the Count to put him to the torture; but being unable to urge any crime but that of desertion against him, he proposed to the Count to sign a resignation, by which he obliged himself never to serve against the Russians; to quit the empire without delay; and never to return, on pain of death.

Under

Under these conditions Count Panin promised him his liberty. Count Benyowsky did not hesitate to sign his resignation, of which the following is the purport.

I, the undersigned, do acknowledge, that having been seized in my flight from Cazan, and her Imperial Majesty of all the Russias having pardoned me by her natural clemency, I have entered into the present renunciation, never to serve any power against the arms of her Imperial Majesty ; and that, upon becoming in possession of my liberty, I promise for ever to quit her dominions, obliging myself, under pain of death, not to enter them again under any pretext whatever. Done at Petersburg, the 22d of November, 1769.

The Count, after having signed this engagement, instead of being set at liberty was reconducted to his prison, and there confined till the 4th of December, when, about two hours after midnight, an officer with seven soldiers came to him, giving orders that they should take off his chains and clothe him in a sheep-skin garment ; after which his fetters were again fastened on, and he was conducted into the court of the prison and thrown upon a sledge, to which two horses were harnessed, which immediately set out with the greatest swiftness. The darkness did not permit the Count to discern the objects around him, but the noise of many bells led him to think that he was followed by several sledges, a circumstance which excited a long train of reflections on the fatality and singular circumstances of his destiny.

At the beginning of his journey he conceived some hopes that he was to be conducted into Poland ; but at day-break the sight of several villages, through which he had passed after his departure from Cazan, destroyed that hope, and convinced him that he was on his way to Siberia as an exile.

When

When they rested at noon the Count received a morsel of dry bread, and on descending from his sledge to mount into another, he perceived Major Wynbladth, who was the companion of his misfortunes. The excessive cold caused the Count to suffer much pain from his wounds, and he was almost frozen when the commander of the convoy made him dismount to pass the night in a cottage. When he recovered the use of his faculties he perceived that he was in company with Major Wynbladth, who not being wounded was better able to support the rigour of the season. In this common state of misfortune it was some consolation that they could see each other and communicate their reflections.

The Russian commander, Prince Maneow, Lieutenant of the troops of the Senate, being affected with their deplorable situation, informed them, in confidence, that his orders were to conduct them to Moscow, from whence they were afterwards to be carried to Tobolzk, and thence to Kamchatka, the place of their exile. He had likewise the politeness to cause them to eat with him.

When they arrived near Moscow their conductor quitted them, and returned with sledges, and a detachment of sixteen soldiers, headed by a Lieutenant, who relieved the Prince Maneow, conducted them forward on their journey. On the 13th of December they arrived at Volodomir, where they were joined by four sledges with four exiles, likewise destined to pass the remainder of their lives at Kamchatka, and from that station they had the consolation of their company. The Count, who was well acquainted with the Russian language, made enquiries concerning these four prisoners. The one was Vassili Vassilics Panow, Lieutenant of the Guards; the second Hippolite Stepanow, Captain
of

of Infantry; the third Asaph Baturin, Colonel of Artillery; and the fourth Ivan Juanies Solmanow, Secretary of the Senate of Moscow. Their escort consisted of forty-six soldiers of Volodimir, under whom they were conducted to Nizney Novogrod, where they arrived on the 18th, and from thence they were drawn to Kuzemodemjaskoy, a town where their guard was reinforced with one hundred and fifty horsemen, to pass more securely through the government of Cazan, at that time disturbed by the incursions of the Tartars, who, since the departure of the Count, had already committed several acts of hostility, and with whom a party of the prisoners deserted from Cazan had taken refuge. These circumstances occasioned the commander of their party not to stop in any of the villages, but to make the best of his way to the town of Malmitz, situated on the banks of the river Viattka, where the reinforcement left them. From Malmitz they were drawn to Saragut, and thence to Kunzir, from Kunzir to Tuninkz, and from thence to Tobolzk, the capital of Siberia, distant seven hundred and eighty leagues from Petersburgh.

On their arrival they were lodged in the town, each separately with his guard. The Governor, Count Denis Juanovicz Csecserin, brother of the Lieutenant-General of the Police of Petersburgh, a man as remarkable for his humanity, as for the politeness of his behaviour, not only caused the irons of the exiles to be taken off, but likewise afforded them every kind of assistance, even to the furnishing them with linen; and as he was affected with the misery of these unfortunate men, he granted them his permission to pass fourteen days in the town, to recover their health, which was much impaired by hunger and the inclemency of the season.

During

During the whole time that the prisoners remained at Tobolczk they were furnished with provisions from his own kitchen, and on their departure he presented each of them with the sum of fifty roubles, with a quantity of brandy, and likewise five hundred pounds of tobacco, an article of great value at Kamchatka.

We shall here terminate the narrative which we have collected of the adventures of the Count, and shall relate the sequel as it is written with his own hand.

JOURNAL

JOURNAL

OF THE

TRAVELS

OF THE

COUNT DE BENYOWSKY
INTO SIBERIA,

IN consequence of an order of the Senate
of PETERSBURGH, by which he was ban-
nished to KAMCHATKA.

CHAP. I.

Introduction.—The Count arrives at Tobolczk, the capital of Siberia.—Humanity of the governor.—Departure from that place.—Villages on the road.—City of Tara.—River and town of Tomsky.—The Tartars interest themselves in favour of the exiles.—A proposal is made to the Count to escape to China, to which his wounds prevent his acceding.—Present to the exiles from the Tartars.—Disinterested behaviour of their conductor.

I WAS born of an illustrious family in Hungary, and served the states of the republic of Poland with some distinction, under whose colours I had the misfortune to be made prisoner by the Russians

Vol. I. E in

in open war, after receiving seventeen wounds. This unfortunate event subjected me to every calamity which tyranny can inflict. I was conveyed from one prison to another, and at last condemned to the unhappy state of slavery. In consequence of the order of the Russian Senate for my banishment, I was loaded with fetters, and conducted to Tobolczk, the capital of Siberia, consisting of about five hundred houses, inhabited by Russians and Tartars. It stands at the foot of a mountain, on the top of which is a castle, commanding the town, and serving as a place of residence for the governor.

The garrison of this town usually consists of two regiments of infantry, three squadrons of cavalry, and two or three hundred Cossacks. The governor of Tobolczk, Count Denis Juanoviecz Cseferin, a man equally estimable for the humanity and generosity of his disposition, caused my fetters to be taken off the first day of my arrival, and, after providing me with a lodging, heaped many favours upon me and Mr. Wynbladth, the companion of my misfortunes. This gentleman was a Major under the confederation, who having shared in my former adventures, was likewise the partner of my banishment. The greatest favour which I obtained from the governor was, doubtless, the use of pen and paper, to dissipate my cares. Precious instrument, which can give the shadow of liberty where the substance exists not! Inestimable gift of art, whose value can be truly estimated by those only who have felt thy loss! With thee I shall still possess the enjoyments of the mind; and by thy assistance my misfortunes and complaints may be transmitted to future times!

I arrived at Tobolczk on the 20th of January, 1770, and as I did not quit this town till the 24th of February, the benevolence and care of the governor enabled me to recover my health and strength

to support the voyage with greater courage. The governor, after having loaded me with marks of his favour, which was likewise extended to my five companions, dispatched us for our place of destination, under the escort of a Sottnik of Cossacks, with twenty-four men under his command; at the same time he informed us that our conductor had orders to treat us with kindness. We departed from Tobolczk with sixteen sledges, so that we had a sledge for every two excepting the commander, who had one for himself. The first pause we made was at Sobulak, a village inhabited entirely by Tartars. Our commander lodged us all with him in a house, and promised that this should be the case throughout the journey. We eat with him, and the Cossacks might have been taken for our servants, from the particular attention which our conductor ordered them to pay us. His example caused the whole troop to omit no means of rendering our journey as agreeable and as comfortable as could be expected in a state of slavery.

On the 5th we departed from Jubalak to continue our journey, and at noon we rested near a river named Supkra to refresh our horses. Our conductor informed us, while his troop was employed in procuring some provisions from the neighbouring villages, that he was the son of a Swedish colonel, who had had the misfortune to be banished, and that he himself, being a native of Siberia, had been inrolled among the Cossacks, over whom he at present was Sottnik, or commander of one hundred men; that since his promotion he had always endeavoured to obtain the charge of the exiles which were to be conducted into Siberia, as it gave him the greatest satisfaction to have an opportunity of alleviating their misfortunes. The free and open manner with which this officer expressed himself, sufficiently showed that he spoke his real sentiments,

and it was a great consolation to us to find ourselves under the direction of a virtuous and compassionate man. From Supkra we continued our journey along the banks of the river Jrtiesh, and arrived at the small town of Berenowzky, where we passed the night. At this place we found twenty exiles, who treated us with fish. These unfortunate men assured us, that in the single province of Tobolczky there were upwards of twenty-two thousand exiles, reduced to seek their maintenance by the chace. From Berenowzky we departed on the 6th, and arrived very late in the night at Isirga, a village composed of about fifteen houses, inhabited by exiles; among whom I recognized an Hungarian, who informed me, that he had been Major of one of the regiments of Hussars in the Russian service, commanded by General Horvath; and that he had the misfortune to be banished for requesting his dismissal, in order to return into his own country. He assured me, that he was a gentleman of the family of Orosz. As I ran no risk in conversing with this unfortunate person in the Hungarian language, which was understood by no one present but him and myself, I asked him many questions, and among others, how it happened that so great a number of exiles, reduced to the most extreme misery, had not yet made some attempts to escape; to which he answered, that a considerable number of their companions had already attempted to escape towards Persia, but having been met by the Nogais Tartars they were all slain, and that this event had intimidated the others, and prevented them from following their example. Besides which he informed me of so many obstacles, that at last I was convinced of the great difficulty of escaping from exile at Tobolczky, and reflected with great satisfaction that my destination was to Kamchatka, on the sea coast, though I am persuaded that there
is

is no country whatever in which liberty may not be gained by an association of resolute men, inspired with the love of independence.

On the 7th, after having passed the river Isirga, we arrived at Juska, a village inhabited by Tartars, who regaled us with mare's milk and horse flesh. The excessive cold and the wind, which threw up the snow in whirlwinds and drifts, forced our commander to remain at this village four days. We quitted it on the 11th, early in the morning, and about noon we rested on the banks of a river, over which we forded, and from whence we proceeded to Ahusca, a village situated on the banks of a river of the same name, which falls into the river Irtisk. Here we passed the night, and the next day proceeded to Tara, the capital of the province of the same name. The commander of our troop proposed to pass some days in this town, on account of the severity of the weather, as well as that we might rest ourselves, and be better enabled to support the fatigues of the rest of our journey, which was to be made without sledges. During our stay at Tara the commandant allowed us the liberty of walking in the town, and even in the environs: his friendly disposition towards us extended so far, that he prevailed on the Voivode to invite us to dinner, and afterwards persuaded several of the inhabitants to make us presents. These consisted of habits for the season, and a considerable quantity of brandy.

On the 22d we at length quitted Tara, and after having repassed the river Irtiska we arrived at Luky, a village inhabited by Tartars; from whence we continued through immense woods and over lofty mountains, where we all suffered greatly from fatigue, and more especially myself, who was covered with wounds. Our days journies were very short, our nights passed in the midst of snow, and our horses had no other food than moss. On the 3d of April, being

being encamped on the river Om, we were surprized by a band of Tartars of the hord of Barabuts. On their first appearance we requested the commandant to supply us with arms to defend ourselves, and immediately mounted our horses. The Tartars approached, observed us for a moment, and passed by, full gallop, without molesting us. After their departure we crossed the river Om, and continued our march to the river Juakra, on the borders of which we pitched our tents. At day-break, just at the moment we mounted our horses, we discovered a troop of armed men on foot, who called out to us, in the Russian language, to wait for them, which our conductor caused us to do. On their arrival they saluted us, and afterwards addressing our chief, they proposed many questions respecting our situation, which, when they learned, they condoled with us, and informed us that they were our partners in misfortune, having been exiled into Siberia, and that for ten years past they had subsisted merely by the chase and fishing. Their number amounted to sixty-three men, who apparently had some enterprize in contemplation. Our commander, who was apprehensive of bad consequences from their company, proposed to part, but they compelled him to remain three days on the spot.

These huntsmen, finding our provision of brandy excellent, did not suffer us to depart but with regret: at length, however, being delivered from these importunate people, we quitted the river Juakra, and marched towards Bogorodekoy, where we arrived on the 11th. From Bogorodekoy we crossed the river Oby, and on the 17th we arrived at Tomszky, a town regularly enough built, but peopled, for the most part, with Tartars. It is situated on the banks of the river Tomszky, and, for its defence, is provided with a kind of fort, in which the Voivode of the province resides, with four hundred soldiers and eight

eight hundred Cossacks. The governor's name was Villeneuve, of French origin, Lieutenant-Colonel in the service of Russia, and formerly an exile. He received us with humanity, and by the persuasion of our conductor, permitted us to remain in the town till the 10th of May, in order to avoid the inclemency of the season, which was so much the more dangerous, as the weather is always extremely wet at the latter end of April and the beginning of May.

We passed our time not disagreeably at Tomskzy, because the Tartars, being informed by our conductor, that we had the misfortune to be made prisoners of war when fighting in conjunction with the Turkish army, made it a point of religion to assist us. Among others a dealer in fables interested himself more particularly in my welfare. He proposed to me to make my escape towards China, and expressed his readiness to run the risk of accompanying me. He informed me that he was born in the hord of Kantay, in the country of Kalkaz, on the borders of China, and was perfectly acquainted with the road thither. I should have accepted his proposal with joy, if the difficulty, or rather the impossibility, of travelling at least three hundred leagues on foot had not detained me. The deplorable situation to which my wounds had reduced me was sufficient to convince him of the impossibility of my accepting his proposition. He therefore loaded me with presents, which, whether they came from him alone, or from the whole body of Tartars of Tomskzy, amounted to more than nine hundred roubles, a sum which we divided amongst us, and out of which we were desirous of making a present to our conductor. But this generous man refused to accept of the smallest trifle, and assured us, that on our arrival at Kamchatka we should find sufficient occasion for our money.

C H A P. II.

Departure from Tomshky.—Juska Krasnoiarshk. Illimsk.—Price current of European goods and furs at that place.—Jakutsk.—Privileged company of traders in furs.—The count projects his future escape in concert with M. Hoffman.—A society of exiles formed.—They depart for Jakutsk, leaving M. Hoffman behind.—Their guards quarrel.—Alarming consequence of Mr. Hoffman's death.—Its effects happily prevented.

ON the 11th of May we at length quitted the town of Tomshky, and passed through a desert country covered with woods and mountains, always encamped in the snow, and after fourteen days most painful march we were necessitated to reduce our allowance to half a pound of biscuit per day. Being thus exhausted by hunger and fatigue, after losing eight Cossacks and twelve horses on the road, we at length arrived on the 18th at Juska Krasnoiarshk, a town situated on the banks of the great river Jenisea: it consists of about thirty houses, inhabited by Russian exiles; the fort, more properly called the miserable intrenchment, in which the house of the Voivode is built, is a raised square surrounded with palisades, and the garrison which defends it is composed only of twenty soldiers, who are likewise exiles.

The Voivode of this province, famous for its misery, lodged us in his fortress, and did not condescend to see us till our conductor had informed him that we intended making him a present. This news, which our conductor likewise communicated

to

to us, occasioned the Governor to invite us to supper; and he did not disdain the acceptance of sixty roubles as a present, and for a like sum he sold us a small barrel of brandy, containing about eighteen bottles.

On the 19th, in the morning, the Voivode pressed our conductor to depart, and we quitted this place about noon. The continuation of our journey was not more agreeable than that from Tomsk. No object presented itself to our eyes but an immense plain of snow, here and there interrupted by mountains. Every succeeding day became more fatiguing. We lost almost all our horses, and we passed the two chains of mountains which separate the government of Illimsk from that of Jeniseisk, almost dying with hunger, having no other subsistence than the bark of the birch tree steeped in water. At length however we arrived on the 25th of July, and the 26th day of our march, on the banks of the river Angara, where we had the good fortune to meet a hord of Tungus Tartars, who gave us four elks, with a provision of dry fish, in exchange for tobacco and brandy.

On the 26th we arrived at Illimsk, the capital of the province of the same name, situated on the banks of the river Illima. This town possesses a considerable trade, arising from the quantity of furs deposited here, which the exiles keep till the arrival of the Russian merchants, who purchase them in exchange for European provisions and export them to China. They usually gain 200 per cent. on the merchandizes of Europe, and on their arrival at China they again redouble their profit on the furs. The following is nearly the rate at which the merchandize of Europe is sold to the hunters and exiles of this place: one pound of gunpowder, three roubles; one pound of tobacco, one rouble and a half; forty pounds of flour, five roubles; ten pounds of butter,

butter, six roubles; a barrel of brandy of eighteen pints, fifty roubles; and in proportion to these values they barter or purchase one sable's skin for one rouble; one black fox's skin, three roubles; one bear's skin, half a rouble; fifty skins of the northern squirrel, (*petit gris*) one rouble; one hundred skins of the white rabbit, one rouble; twenty-four skins of ermins, one rouble, &c. &c.

The Voivode of this province, after having supplied us with six elks and twenty pounds of flour for our provision, dispatched us to Ustkokoy a village situated on the banks of the Lena, where we embarked in canoes, made of the bark of birch, in order to hasten our journey. We passed down the river Lena, which runs by Jakutsk, and after running through all the northern part of Siberia empties itself into the frozen sea. Our voyage by water was very commodious and agreeable on account of the beauty of the season, and we happily arrived at Jakutsk on the 20th of August, where we were all lodged in one house, having for our guard only four soldiers, commanded by a serjeant, who relieved our conductor.

The town of Jakutsk, which is situated in the sixty second degree of north latitude, is the capital of a province of the same name. It is composed of 130 houses and a fortress, the whole built of wood, and inhabited either by exiles or Cossacks, a kind of military which the government has formed by enrolling all the male children of the Swedes and Germans formerly exiled into Siberia. This troop is usually employed by government to levy tribute on the Tartars who are subject to Russia. Their number, in the year 1764, amounted to twelve thousand armed men.

During our stay at this place I became acquainted with several Greek merchants to whom the Empress had granted the exclusive privilege of the fur trade

trade in this province, in consideration of the sum of thirty thousand roubles. They assured me they had already gained above eighty thousand roubles besides the purchase money; but that being obliged to share that sum with governors and ministers, for the support of their rights, this trade had not been extremely advantageous, especially since the war with Turkey had, during the last three years, interrupted the freedom of commerce. I likewise became acquainted with several exiles, from whom I learned that there were thirty-five officers exiled in that town, and that their number in that single province amounted to four hundred and twenty-five men. All these unfortunate persons lamented the departure of Mons. de Brin, a Frenchman, Colonel in the service of Russia, who had, during five years been Voivode of the province; and who, unfortunately for them, had been relieved by a Russian as remarkable for his cruelty and barbarity as his predecessor was for his generosity and goodness.

On the third day after my arrival in this city I received a visit from the Sieur Hoffman, a Surgeon, who was sent from Petersburg to Kamchatka, to exercise his profession as Surgeon Major of the Government, with a salary of one thousand five hundred roubles. At our first meeting I perceived, from his conversation, that he possessed a penetrating mind and a worthy and amiable disposition. The account I gave of my misfortunes, and the excess of barbarity under which I had long suffered, affected him greatly; and as he considered his mission to Kamchatka as an exile, he did not hesitate to propose, without any previous overture from me, his opinion that on our arrival at Kamchatka, we should direct our attention to an escape by the way of sea, either to Japan or China; and that he saw no other difficulty than the procuring sailors to conduct the vessel, which he proposed to purchase under the

the pretence of employing it in fishing. This proposition convinced me that he was determined to share my fate. I therefore assured him that he needed not be uneasy with regard to navigating the vessel, because I was sufficiently capable of undertaking that task by virtue of the experience I had acquired during several voyages. I likewise informed him that it was with the greatest satisfaction that I learned his resolution, which I had myself conceived and formed from the first instant that I heard that Kamchatka was the place of my exile; and that provided he continued in the same opinion, and kept the most profound secrecy, I would answer for its success.

From that day our discourse was continually directed to the means of securing our escape. I ran no hazard in making this proposal to my companions, who, during the whole journey, had shewn me the most particular respect, which was increased by the junction of Mr. Hoffman, who united himself to us by oath.

On the 29th of August the company elected me their chief; it was composed of Mr. Hoffman, Major Winbladth, Captain Panow, Captain Hoppolite Stephano, Colonel Baturin, and Secretary Sopronow. The ardent desire which we all had to carry our design into execution, induced us to use our endeavours with the Voivode to dispatch us to Ochoczk, a sea port in Siberia, from whence we were to embark for Kamchatka. He readily acceded to our wishes, and dispatched us on the 29th of the same month under the guard of two Szottnik, or captains, with twelve Cossacks under their command. Mr. Hoffman unfortunately could not depart with us, on account of the necessity of carrying his effects with him. On our departure from Jakutzk we were attended by most of the exiles, who regaled us with a good dinner on the banks of the river Lena. Among these unhappy men were two
Russian

Russian Lords, of the family of Gurgiew, both young, who, after having served in the guards of the Empress, were exiled by her orders on the death of the late Emperor. The new manner of travelling on sledges drawn by elks was very agreeable to us. The swiftness and agility with which these animals run can hardly be conceived, and their manner of subsisting is still more surprising: an handful of moss mixed with urine, enables them to support the fatigue of three or four days.

The sixth day after our departure we arrived on the banks of the river Tola, where we were obliged to remain two days, because our conductor thought proper to employ that time in visiting the Tartar chiefs of the hord Jakutti, to extort presents from them, of which they brought a tolerable large quantity in skins of martins, foxes, and roszomak, an animal peculiar to this province. Its figure nearly resembles that of the European wolf, and its skin has the same appearance, excepting that its colour is a glossy black. The women in Siberia make bonnets of this skin.

On the 3d of September we passed the river Tola, and continued our journey without interruption thus far, excepting a difference which happened among our conductors, during the time our camp was pitched on the banks of this river, where they made a stop for the purpose of gambling, an occupation which they had strenuously followed ever since our departure from Jakutsk. One of the Cossacks having lost all his provisions in play against the chief, thought proper to indulge himself in some disrespectful expressions, upon which the Commander ordered the Cossacks to tie him up and give him one hundred lashes with the whip. Instead, however, of executing the orders of their commander, the Cossacks took the part of the culprit, and after having stripped their officer naked, entertained him
with

with more than three hundred stripes; an operation, which, though we bore no part in it, nevertheless afforded us some diversion.

This adventure was quickly followed by an event which greatly alarmed us. We were informed by a Cossack, sent express from Jakutzk, that Mr. Hoffman was dead, and that, after his decease, the governor had found certain interesting papers among his effects, which he had forwarded to the governor of Ochoczk, in a packet, to be put into the hands of our conductor, addressed to Mr. Plenifner, Commandant of that town, recommending to him not to send us to Kamchatka. This relation convinced us that the Sieur Hoffman had either written some letters to his friends at Petersburg, in which he informed them of his project, or that he had made some notes relative to our affair. After many suppositions, we concluded that the Governor at least suspected our project, if he was not entirely convinced of it; and that he had sent dispatches to the Governor of Ochoczk, in consequence of which, it was probable we might be sent to prison a second time. In this situation, I proposed to my companions to seize the packet and change the contents by the assistance of Mr. Sophronow, who having been Secretary, might draw up a letter to our advantage, to be included among the other papers. My proposition was accepted by my companions, and we immediately determined to avail ourselves of every means of executing it. An opportunity soon after presented itself. On the 11th of September, as we were passing the river Aldan in boats, our elks at the same time swimming over, the boat in which our conductor was placed with his dispatches was overset by the malice of the Cossacks; who, after having well flogged him, were desirous of playing another trick, to disembarraß themselves entirely of his company. It was a happy circumstance for him that

that he was a good swimmer, and quickly reached the shore. The readiness with which I ran to his assistance, and the suspicions he had of his Cossacks, led him to attach himself to me, and that more especially, because he observed that my companions treated me with respect, and of course that I might be very useful in defending him, in case the Cossacks should hereafter make any attempts against his safety.

This rough passage over the river Aldan obliged our conductors to halt, in order to dry their cloaths, and I seized the occasion to treat them with brandy, at the same time that I engaged them in a gaming party. My stratagem succeeded so well, that after having consumed nine pints of brandy, they every one fell asleep. During this period of insensibility we seized the dispatches, which we found drawn up in such terms as were calculated to render our captivity extremely wretched, and shewed that we had every reason to congratulate ourselves on the lucky chance which offered itself. The letter of the commandant of Jakutzk to the commanding officer of Ochoczsk was to the following effect :—

“ The two Szottnik, Kolosow and Rostarguew,
“ conduct six prisoners of state, sent by order of
“ the Senate as exiles to Kamchatka, whom you
“ are desired to confine in prison without delay,
“ and keep them safe until you shall receive from
“ me more ample information respecting their conduct and designs, in order that you may then
“ examine them with the utmost strictness. My
“ present knowledge respecting them is as follows :
“ On their arrival at Jakutzk I took pity on them,
“ and allowed them the liberty of walking about
“ the town ; but they abused my favour, by exciting several of the exiles to revolt, and one in
“ particular among them, named Maurice Augustovicz, has been artful enough to gain over to
“ his

“ his interests the Surgeon Hoffman, who pro-
 “ mised to join with him at Kamchatka, to procure
 “ a ship, that they might deliver all the exiles of
 “ Kamchatka. I was informed of this abominable
 “ project by one of the exiles, to whom the Sieur
 “ Hoffman had spoken in confidence before his de-
 “ cease. I have found several papers among his
 “ effects after his death, which I do not under-
 “ stand, because written in the German language,
 “ but which I send you, in hopes that you may be
 “ able to discover their contents. Supposing, how-
 “ ever, that these wretches have no other design
 “ than that of making their escape, which, how-
 “ ever, I do not conceive to be the case, it becomes
 “ necessary to look strictly after them, and I advise
 “ you not to send them to Kamichatka this year. I
 “ shall transmit an account of this event in my first
 “ dispatches to the Senate, and request their orders,
 “ which you cannot receive in less than a year.”

We examined the other papers of the Sieur Hoff-
 man, but found nothing which tended to betray
 us. There was no other paper among the dispatches
 but the Governor's letter, which could have injured
 us, for which reason we contented ourselves with
 changing it for another, to the following tenor :

“ Sir,

“ The two Szottnik, Kolosow and Rostarguew,
 “ conduct six prisoners of state, sent into exile to
 “ Kamchatka, by order of the Senate. After I be-
 “ came acquainted with them, I found their beha-
 “ viour such as led me to interest myself in their
 “ favour, and convinced me that they are all men
 “ of honour, especially the two foreigners, who are
 “ merely prisoners of war. My disposition to assist
 “ the unfortunate induces me to write to you in
 “ their favour. Is it not practicable to allow them
 “ a certain degree of liberty in your town, to pre-
 “ serve them from the scurvy, a disorder which is

“ so

“ dangerous in your port? You will run no risk in
“ allowing these unfortunate men a certain degree
“ of liberty, for it is impossible that they should
“ make an ill use of your confidence. The surgeon
“ Hoffman, who was about to repair to Kamchatka,
“ is dead, and I have no person to appoint in his
“ place. One of these prisoners is of the same pro-
“ fession. I see no inconvenience in recommend-
“ ing him to the governor of Kamchatka, who be-
“ ing unprovided will, doubtless, be glad to avail
“ himself of his services. The papers which accom-
“ pany this belong to the late Mr. Hoffman. I
“ send them that you may procure a translation,
“ and afford some explanation relative to his pro-
“ perty, as I have reason to think he possessed some
“ share in the company of hunters. With every
“ wish for your prosperity, I am, &c.”

After having thus carried our project into execu-
tion, we dismissed our fears, and our satisfaction
was complete when we were assured, after the waking
of our conductors, that they had not observed any
alteration in the packets. We continued our jour-
ney peaceably enough to the river Inna, on the
banks of which we arrived on the 20th of Septem-
ber. The prodigious quantity of fish which we ob-
served in this river caused us to remain on the spot
two days, when we departed with a considerable
provision of fish, and continued our journey con-
stantly due east. We passed over very lofty moun-
tains and dreadful precipices. The cold was so ex-
treme near the summits of the mountains, that two of
our conductors were frozen to death.

C H A P. III.

Village of Judoma.—Sledges drawn by dogs.—Arrival at Ochoczk.—Description of that town and harbor.—State of its commerce.—The exiles embark for Kamchatka.—Their dangerous passage.

ON the 29th we arrived at a village composed of six houses, inhabited by exiles, and situated on the banks of the river Judoma. At this place we were provided with sledges drawn by dogs, for the rest of our journey to Ochoczk. Though Judoma is composed only of six wretched houses, the place is well known, because it is the rendezvous of several Tunguse nations, and some hords of Mongols, who repair thither to trade with the hunters [promisseny]. It is by this contraband intercourse that the most beautiful skins pass into China without paying any duties; and it would be difficult for government to put a stop to it, because all the Cossacks, and their chiefs, are interested. In the month of November they meet at Judoma, to the number of four or five hundred armed men; besides which it is a part of the policy of government to wink at this contravention, as it would be dangerous to excite the Siberians to revolt; the slightest disturbance would arm the inhabitants, and, if this should once happen, Siberia would be for ever lost to Russia.

After our departure from Judoma we passed over a dreadful chain of mountains, where we were excessively fatigued, because we were entirely ignorant of the manner of driving the dogs. More than once I fell down descents of above sixty feet in depth, together with the dogs and sledges; but it
is

is one fortunate circumstance, that in this country there is no falling but among snow, so that I suffered little more on these occasions than a few bruises. When we had crossed the mountains our journey was more agreeable, for we passed without danger along the banks of the river Urak, where, if my situation had been less wretched, I might have received some pleasure from the prospect around me. It consisted of immense mountains, standing separate on the vast extent of a sea of snow; a view which affected the mind with a sense of magnificence and terror united.

On the 16th of October we at last arrived at Ochoczk, where we were immediately conducted to the Chancery, and thence to our respective quarters, with four Cossacks, and an Attamen or Corporal, as guards for each. The commanding officer of this town, and of the whole province, was Mr. Plenifner, a native of Courland, exiled in the time of the Empress Elizabeth. I cannot determine whether we were indebted to our stratagem of counterfeiting a letter from the Voivode of Jakutzk, or to his natural disposition, for the goodness he shewed to us. On the first day of our arrival we were very commodiously lodged in the houses of towns-people, who were in very good circumstances, and it was at the same time intimated to us, that we might enjoy full liberty and go out whenever we pleased, provided we took a guard with us.

The town of Ochoczk is situated in fifty-nine degrees seventeen minutes north latitude, and three hundred and forty-eight degrees ten minutes longitude, from the meridian of Kamchatka. It is very indifferently built of wood, and stands on the banks of the river Ochota, the mouth of which is defended by what they call a fortress, though it is nothing more than a simple square surrounded with palisades, and provided with a four-pounder at each

angle. The garrison of this fortress is nevertheless composed of four hundred and eighty soldiers, all exiles from the European troops. The town contains three hundred and twenty-two houses, inhabited by exiles, who, since the year 1741, the time of the expedition of Captain Beering, have applied themselves to sea affairs. Their number may amount to about nine hundred men. Ochotsk is the storehouse of the commerce of Kamchatka. The Governor is nominated chief of all the colleges, of which there are four, established at this place, viz. the College of Admiralty, the College of War, the College of Commerce, and the College of Police and Administration. These denominations at first appeared striking and important to me, but the charm soon disappeared, when I found that the members who composed them were brutes, whose only merit was placed in continual licentiousness and debauchery. I have often seen many of these members five or six days together in a continued state of intoxication. The rich furs which the Koraks, Lamuths and Tunguses, who are in subjection to the Russian government, and whose number amounts to forty-two thousand souls, pay as a tribute to government, and of which the imposition is arbitrarily varied, according to the interest of these members, who in turn perform the function of Collector, supply them with the means of obtaining strong liquors, whatever may be their prices, and they do not fail to drown their cares in brandy.

Two years before my arrival a battery had been erected on the point of land which closes the entrance of the river, in order to defend the town from the incursions of the independent Koraks and Tsuktzy, two savage nations who inhabit the northern part of the province, and are irreconcilable enemies of the Russians. They maintain a correspondence with the subjected Koraks and the Tunguses, which
circumstance

circumstance finds government sufficient business to prevent their confederation. The disposition of these people caused an alarm in the government during my stay; for thirty Cossacks having deserted from Ochoczk gave them reason to fear that their design was to collect these nations together; but this apprehension was dissipated by the information which was received, that the deserters had directed their course towards the river Amur.

The port of Ochoczk, which at the deepest contains no more than nineteen feet of water, is formed by the river Ochota, which in its course has worn a bay. The entrance is N. $\frac{1}{4}$ W. I found in the port two vessels of two hundred and fifty tons each, and eleven others, the largest of which was three hundred and fifty tons burthen, and the smallest eighty. These vessels were designed either to make discoveries on the coast of California, or to carry provisions to the different ports of Kamchatka, or were freighted by individuals, who make expeditions in the islands Kurilles, Aleuthes, and Alaksa, to chase beavers, foxes, and bears. The harbour-master, Lieutenant Sind, informed me, that during the last year the Captains Kreniczin and Levascheff, who were sent by order of the Empress on a voyage of discovery, had armed two vessels, one the St. Peter and St. Paul, and the other named the Elizabeth, with which they departed to examine the coast of California; but that they returned without doing any thing, under the pretence that their crews had mutinied, though the true reason for their want of success consisted in their ignorance and want of experience.

Being desirous of profiting by my stay in this place, I enquired of different persons concerning the interests of Russia, the population of Siberia, the history of the country, the customs, manners, and usages of its inhabitants, their prejudices, and treaties

ties between one nation and another ; but as this subject is in some respect foreign to the purpose intended in the present narrative, I shall content myself with annexing my ideas in the form of a supplement to the present memoir, and shall only observe in this place, that Ochoczka and Kamchatka are become places of great importance to Russia, from the yearly increase of revenue their commerce affords to that empire. The following is a short statement of what I learned from the Secretary of the Chancery : The importation of beaver skins, one year with another, amounts to sixteen thousand ; of fables twenty-three thousand ; of ermines one hundred and eighty-four thousand ; of black foxes two thousand five hundred ; of rossomaks seven thousand ; of the common fox fourteen thousand ; of the northern squirrel thirty-six thousand ; of pelci and rabbits twenty-five thousand ; of sea wolves six thousand ; and of bears four or five thousand. These articles are conveyed to Jeniseisk, in exchange for brandy, tobacco, flour, coarse cloth, silk, &c. the intrinsic value of which does not exceed two hundred thousand roubles, though the amount of the sale of the furs in China is near two millions of roubles. From this statement it is evident that Russia cannot but gain immense capitals by this commerce.

The time of my stay at Ochoczka was very agreeable ; but as I had reason to fear that the governor of Jakutzka would discover our plot in his next dispatches, I persuaded my companions unanimously to request orders for our departure, and to engage the governor to dismiss us for Kamchatka as soon as possible. This officer was likewise urged by its being the season to dispatch vessels to Kamchatka, and accordingly embarked us on board the packet St. Peter and St. Paul, of two hundred and forty tons burthen, with eight pieces of cannon and forty-three men, commanded by the Sieurs Esuryn and Korostilow ;

Korostilow; their lading was one hundred and forty-two sacks of flour, each containing one hundred pounds; two hundred barrels of brandy, each containing twenty-five pints; and the rest of the cargo belonged to several merchants, by whom it was freighted. On our arrival on board we were received very roughly by the second in command, who, after having indulged himself in a set of invectives, caused us to be chained and confined before the mast, with orders to employ us in the meanest labour. As we had already been accustomed to a small portion of liberty, our situation afflicted us not a little; but it lasted only one day, for on the arrival of the captain we were delivered from our fetters, and had the satisfaction to see our enemy punished with fifty strokes of the knout for having acted without orders.

The journal of our navigation is not sufficiently interesting to be given in detail; I shall, therefore, speak only of the leading circumstances. On the 22d of November we dropped down the river to its mouth, where we moored in two fathoms and three quarters water, the wind being north. On the 23d we set sail, the wind having changed to the north-west, with a very hollow sea and considerable cold. On the 24th a violent tempest arose, which obliged us to lay-to, the wind being then south-west; the gale increased in the night, and the Captain, with all his men, having got drunk on the occasion, a favourable opportunity presented itself to seize this vessel, thus abandoned to the fury of the elements. Unfortunately for us, however, the swell of the sea, and repeated squalls of wind, prevented our executing an attempt of this nature. On the 25th, in the night, the wind, after veering all round the compass, fixed at north-east, and continued to blow with extraordinary violence. About three in the morning our main-mast sprung, and we carried away the mizen.

mizen-topmast; so that nothing remained standing but the mizen-mast. The noise of these disasters roused the Captain, who crawled out of his cabin to give us orders, but part of the wreck falling upon him, broke his arm, and rendered him incapable of attending his duty, in which, indeed, he would have had no opportunity of displaying much management, as the whole of our masts, yards, and rigging, was nearly unserviceable. In this situation of extreme necessity we redoubled our efforts to repel the danger, and the sailors, drunk as they were, seemed well aware of the utility of our services. Some of them joined us, and with hearty curses on their officers for ignorant and drunken wretches, swore that they would obey our orders. The Captain, who was likewise persuaded that he was indebted to our efforts for his preservation, and being afraid to put the command into the hands of his mate, whom he had hitherto kept in irons, declared loudly that he entrusted the conduct of the vessel to my care till he should be himself able to attend to it.

On the 26th about noon the wind slackened, and after much labour I set the fore-sail by passing a stay from the bowsprit, to the stump of the main-mast. At five in the afternoon the wind changed to north-west, and slackened, so that we set the mizen and mizen-stay-sail; but we could not keep her to her course long, for the wind changed again to east-south-east, which obliged me to close hawl, in which situation we made our course good between south and south one quarter west. On the 27th we saw land, and by a meridian observation the latitude was fifty-four degrees seventeen minutes. The sailors affirmed that the land was the island of Sachalin. Our situation tempted me to seize this occasion of escaping from slavery: I therefore proposed to the crew to anchor on the coast of Korea,

to repair our masts and trim our cargo, which had shifted in such a manner as to endanger our over-setting, in case we should be visited by a gale of wind like the former. Notwithstanding this, however, all the rhetoric I could use was incapable of prevailing over the crew, who, being encouraged by the appearance of settled weather, obliged me to bear away from the coast of Korea. It was in vain that I made use of iron and garlick to falsify the compass. This stratagem, perhaps, might have succeeded if the wind had not changed; but it suddenly set in between the south-west and south south-west, and thus forced me, in spite of my inclination, to direct my course for Kamchatka. On the 1st of December we discovered land, which the sailors perceived to be the mountain of Alaksa, and from their information respecting the land marks I brought the vessel into the mouth of the Bofa.

C H A P. IV.

Arrival at Kamchatka.—Conference with some exiles there.—They wait upon the governor, and receive instructions.—Village of the exiles.—Ordinances of the Czar Peter for their regulation.

ON the 2d, at high water, we entered the port; and in this place my command terminated. On the 3d we were set on shore, and lodged in a yourth, which is a kind of house built of earth, the roof alone being visible above ground. We were guarded by four soldiers, eight Cossacks, and a serjeant. About noon we saw several vessels, which dropped down the river; they were of the kind called Bajdara in the language of the country, formed of very thin planks, fastened together with whalebone, or covered with sea wolves skins, well sewed together. One of these vessels conveyed a Russian officer, with ten Cossacks, deputed from the Governor of Kamchatka to receive the packets from court, and take the exiles under his guard. The officer went first on board the vessel, and afterwards on shore, where he relieved our guard by his Cossacks. A certain something, which, according to his own expression, struck him at first sight of me, excited his curiosity to know who I was, which I satisfied laconically by answering, “a soldier, once “a general, but now a slave.” This answer surprised him, and, as he has since protested, conciliated his esteem. When he learned that my companions were likewise officers, he presented us with a dinner according to the custom of the country, which consisted of boiled fish, roasted fish, and fish powdered and made into bread. This cookery would have

have disgusted famine itself, but the thing which the most effectually overset my stomach was the drink; it was composed of fish putrified in water, the corruption of which gives the water a certain sourness. During the dinner, at which it might be of some service to the epicures of our great towns to have been present, the conversation turned on the manners and customs of the country, and the conclusion in every case was, that there is not a more miserable country on the face of the earth. After dinner the officer caused us to embark in his boats, two in each, and conducted us to the town called Bolforetzkoy Ostrogg.

After rowing four verstes we met four vessels, with men on board very well cloathed. They stopped to question us concerning Europe, but when they were informed by our guards that we were exiles, we were surprized to behold their change of countenance, and the joy and satisfaction, which they could not conceal. We supposed their offers of service and demonstrations of gladness were mockery, and as we thought ourselves justly offended, we threatened vengeance if they continued to insult our misfortunes, and most assuredly we should have returned the supposed insult, if the commander of our convoy had not informed us that our quarrel was founded in misunderstanding, and assured us that our supposed antagonists were companions in misfortune, being exiles as well as ourselves. The similarity of our fate and misfortunes produced an instantaneous friendship, and their first transports of joy, which were founded only on the hope of finding some consolation in our society, were succeeded by tears. They gave us an affecting account of their situation, and the cruelty with which they were treated; and their recital confirmed us in the opinion, that there is no slavery more dreadful than that of an exile at Kamchatka. I assured them

them that we set the highest value on their good wishes, and in the name of all my companions testified our ardent desire to continue in friendship, and maintain an indissoluble connection with them. The first moment of conversation afforded me a favourable opportunity of establishing a system of union among the exiles; for they did not fail to inform me that many among themselves were continually caballing about the governor, in hopes of gaining his favour at the expence of their companions. My observations on this subject appeared to act strongly upon them, and they protested that they would embrace the earliest opportunity of assembling all our friends, to determine upon the establishment of a certain order among them, and that they believed they could not do better than to acknowledge me as their chief, &c. This declaration was very flattering to me, and I have since been perfectly convinced of the advantages of the steps they proposed to take.

The officer, fearing to be benighted, pressed us to continue our journey. Our new companions changed their course to accompany us, and during this short voyage the assurances and protestations of the most sincere friendship were a hundred times repeated. They promised that we should find conveniences in their habitations sufficient to permit us to rest a few days after our fatigue; but that it would soon after be necessary to labour, in order to secure ourselves from famine. Their accounts of the place entirely disheartened my companions; but as to myself, who have always laid it down as a principle to do every thing in my power to prevent the greatest evils, to overcome the present, and to give myself little concern for the future, I was only attentive to such parts of their narration as tended to render me acquainted with our situation, and the possibility of delivering ourselves from it. My
conclusions

conclusions were nearly as follow: 1. That liberty was granted to us merely for the purpose of earning a subsistence, of which we could not assure ourselves without the most unremitted labour. 2. That it was of the greatest consequence that I should gain the favour of the governor, in order to obtain permission, on some future occasion, to arm a vessel to hunt the beaver, in order that we might make our escape on that first occasion. 3. That it was necessary to establish an union among all the exiles, and to cause them to adopt a certain deference for me. 4. That it was absolutely necessary to invent some method of keeping the secret, on the confidence of which I might be enabled to confer with many individuals respecting our departure.

My mind was so occupied in the adjustment of these concerns that I paid very little attention to the circumstances of our voyage: we arrived, therefore, insensibly, at the close of the day, to the town; where, on our landing, we were shut up in a house opposite the fortress. On the 4th, at ten in the morning, we were conducted by our guards before the governor, Mr. Nilow, who having been informed of the services I had performed in the course of our navigation, received me very civilly, and thanked me for the care and pains I had taken in preserving the ship. After which he separately examined us respecting our quality, causes of our exile, &c. and lastly ordered us to go before the secretary of the chancery, Mr. Sudeikyn, who, he informed us, would give us more ample instructions respecting our future situation, which, as far as depended upon himself, he would not fail to mitigate, provided we behaved ourselves with obedience, and performed our duty in a peaceable manner, by remitting the hyassak or tribute to the chancery which should be prescribed. After this
fine

fine speech he caused us to be led to the secretary, whom we found in the chancery office; the governor's servant put a paper into his hands, which he read, and then assured us that we might esteem it a great happiness that we were sent to Kamchatka, as there was not a better disposed gentleman in the whole world than the governor; and that, with regard to himself, he was a gentleman of distinction honoured with the peculiar confidence of her Majesty the Empress; and moreover, that he was disposed to protect us in the most effectual manner. I returned him our thanks for his goodness in interesting himself in favour of the unfortunate, and intreated him to inform us of our duty, and the mode of conduct to which it was expected we should conform; in answer to this he acquainted us,

1. That we should be set at liberty on the following day, and provided with subsistence for three days, after which we must depend upon ourselves for our maintenance.

2. That each person would receive from the chancery, a musquet and a lance, with one pound of powder, four pounds of lead, a hatchet, several knives, and other instruments and carpenters tools, with which we might build cabins, and that we were at liberty to choose our situations at the distance of one league from the town; but that we should be bound to pay in furs, during the first year, each one hundred roubles, in return for these advantages.

3. That every one must work at the corvée one day in the week for the service of government, and that we might not absent ourselves from our houses for twenty-four hours without the permission of the governor.

4. That each exile should bring to the chancery six sable skins, fifty rabbits skins, two foxes skins, and twenty-four ermines per annum.

After

After this information the secretary dismissed our guards and caused provisions for three days to be immediately distributed, the whole consisting of nine pounds of dried fish. We then quitted the chancery and went directly to the magazine to receive our arms and utensils, which were carefully delivered to us according to our choice, for the store-keeper permitted us to choose, in consequence of our having promised him some furs. It was with the greatest pleasure that I again beheld myself armed; and my companions received equal satisfaction from the same circumstance. When we came out of the magazine we perceived twenty exiles, who had brought some sledges drawn by dogs to assist in carrying our charge, and who offered us the use of their cabins until we should have built our own. We accepted their invitation, and departed towards their home. Their repeated marks of civility were exceedingly fatiguing to us who were in a state of extreme hunger, but at length, about three in the afternoon, we arrived at their habitations, which formed a small village composed of eight cabins, and the same number of balagans, or magazines. In the centre of the village we perceived a long square building, which our new companions informed us was their public hall of meeting.

The number of these unfortunate men was twenty-three, and there were about thirty women living with them; among these I remarked that a person of the name of Crustiew possessed a considerable degree of authority, and I soon perceived that it was his house into which we were received. He caused us to sit in his youth round the fire, while the women presented us with brandy and dried fish, and afterwards tea and butter; this breakfast was followed by a dinner, which consisted entirely of fish, and we were not without a desert, composed of caviar and cedar nuts. Our dinner passed in great silence, be-
cause

cause we were busied in filling our empty stomachs ; but when we had performed this task, the conversation began by enquiries on our part respecting our present situation : the accounts we received served only to render us more intimately acquainted with the extent of our misfortunes. The following are the chief particulars concerning which we were informed :

1. That the ordinances of the Czar Peter enacted, that no exile could possess property ; and that in consequence of this edict the soldiers of the garrison frequently entered the houses of the exiles and carried away whatever they pleased, against which depredation the exiles had no remedy.

2. That in case an exile should have been so rash as to strike a citizen or soldier, though upon provocation, he was condemned to die of hunger.

3. That on account of their being declared exiles from civil society, every faithful subject was prohibited from receiving them into their houses.

4. That their lives being granted them for no other purpose than to implore the mercy of God and the remission of their sins, they could be employed only in the meanest works to gain their daily subsistence.

The knowledge of these articles made me tremble with horror and indignation ; this, exclaimed I to myself, is the legislation of a man revered by all Europe ! But as I had no design of patiently enduring the unhappy state of such a slavery, the account only encreased my ardour and my efforts to deliver myself from it. As the first step, I determined to speak privately to Mr. Crustiew, who had an ascendancy over the others ; and who, on account of his having resided eight years at Kamchatka, could easily afford me every necessary information.

After our conversation had turned for a considerable time upon the disagreeable events of the life
into

into which we were about to enter, and our hosts having assured us that there were some among them who had groaned under this slavery for twenty-six years, Mr. Panow, one of my companions, who during the whole discourse had appeared absorbed in contemplation, suddenly exclaimed, "How is it possible, my friends, that brave men like you can have endured this unhappy fate without having made some attempt to deliver yourselves from tyranny? You are afraid of death then, and in this case I fear we shall find no true associates in you."—He would have continued his discourse, but Mr. Crustiew made a sign to me to interrupt him, which I did by directing the conversation to another subject; but at the same time I resolved to ask the reason from Mr. Crustiew, why he objected to our conversing in an open manner.

Our entertainer caused brandy and tea to be served, and proposed to his companions to receive us in their cabins and share their provisions with us, observing to them that we should not be able to build new cabins during the winter. The congress applauded this proposition, and to conciliate our union, we swore a mutual friendship; after which every one received a companion. My lot, in which I confess there was a slight management, gave me to Mr. Crustiew.

C H A P. V.

The Count forms an intimacy with Mr. Crustiew, an exile.—Society established for projecting the means of escape.—The Count's speech and plan of a constitution.—The exiles wait upon the Governor and the chancellor.—The Governor appoints the Count to teach the languages to his children.—An unforeseen event tends greatly to mitigate the distresses and advance the projects of the exiles.

OUR places of habitation being thus settled, every one retired, and I seized the first opportunity of being alone with Mr. Crustiew, to enquire the reason why he had interrupted the discourse of Mr. Panow, at the same time that I assured him I could not persuade myself that any one amongst them could be so base as to betray his companions: it is very true, replied he, my dear friend, that you can have no reason to think so meanly of any of them, though it is very certain, that there are some among us who would rather pass the rest of their lives in this cursed country than expose themselves to the mercy of the waves. But the most humiliating circumstance is, that there are among us some wretches, who, in hopes of obtaining their liberty, by betraying our secrets, would certainly lose no time in communicating our projects to the governor; for, continued he, there exists a law, which is the only one in favour of exiles, to the effect, that every exile who shall have revealed to the governor any plot concerning his authority, or relating to the public peace, which may be carried on by other exiles, shall be immediately set at liberty. He ended his discourse

course by assuring me that his life and his utmost exertions were entirely at my service; that he would avail himself of the first occasion to declare me chief of the society, and that, in a word, my principles and views should in future be the rule by which he would direct his own. We, therefore, referred the more ample consideration of our interests till another occasion, when we proposed to determine the manner of executing an attempt, either to set ourselves at liberty, or sacrifice our lives in the pursuit.

Such was the issue of the first day of my arrival, after which we retired to rest. I made many reflections on all that happened during the course of the day, and determined on the means of preserving the secret of whatever we might in future deliberate or conclude upon amongst ourselves.

I perceive that I cannot in future relate the continuation of my memoirs in the form of an history, and shall therefore proceed in the form of a journal.

On the 5th, I arose and examined the whole cabin, which appeared to be very well furnished; but what surprized me the most agreeably was, an alcove of the same kind as that in which I slept, which was filled with French, Russian, English, German, and Latin books, placed in order. I found Anson's Voyage lying on a table, and began to read it with pleasure, but had scarcely finished the first page before Mr. Crustiew entered and embraced me. Our first conversation turned on this famous voyager, and my friend informed me that for six years past he had deliberated in his own mind on the means of quitting Kamchatka, and making his way to the Marian islands. The account of the island of Tinian, as described in that publication, had struck the imagination of Mr. Crustiew so forcibly, that the island, in his opinion, was nothing less than paradise. From this turn of mind, I determined to

acquaint him with the resolution of myself and my companions, at the same time proposing that he should join us. He joyfully accepted my proposition, and kneeling before me, immediately took an oath of fidelity and obedience. He assured me likewise, that by his incorporation into our society, he should reinforce it with twenty other companions; but he requested my permission to speak to them concerning it. I was delighted with an acquisition of such considerable value, but confined myself to take his oath of constant friendship, at the same time that I begged him not to act precipitately, but to wait for the approbation of our society; the rules of which I was endeavouring to establish for the purpose of securing our mutual preservation and regulating our conduct.

After these preliminaries I informed my companions, and we established a committee of the following members:

Myself, chief,
Panow,
Baturin,
Stephanow,
Solmanow,
Wynbladth,
Crustiew,
Wasili, my old servant.

At the opening of our assembly I addressed the meeting as follows:

“ A variety of events has forced us to this place,
“ where we find ourselves oppressed under one common misfortune. We are all aware of its cruelty and barbarity, and its duration threatens us with the most dreadful consequences. The excess of our misfortune ought, therefore, to lead us to seek our own safety, by throwing off this abominable yoke of slavery, to which injustice and despotism hath condemned us. The equality
“ of

“ of our unfortunate situation renders our conditions equal: there can be no question therefore of preference among us in consequence of the titles we may have formerly possessed, whether by birth or acquisition. At this moment we are equal by the very nature of our situation; and from this point it is that I will proceed to propose to you a constitution relative to ourselves, in order that we may, with perfect safety, establish a plan of operation, the execution of which will lead us to liberty.

“ From our own experience in the world we cannot but be convinced, that no society can exist without the choice of a person, to whom the supremacy shall be intrusted. The choice of such a person ought therefore to engage our first attention. He shall be our creature, but at the same time that we give him our confidence, it will be necessary that we pay him the most perfect submission. In order to proceed without delay to this nomination, I propose the most simple method; namely, that every one shall write the name of the person on whom his choice shall be fixed, and the plurality of names shall determine. When a chief shall be thus elected, let him swear to keep the following four articles:

“ 1. That he shall employ his utmost abilities and every possible means to form a plan, which he shall carry into effect at the peril and risk of his life. This plan shall tend to set us at liberty as early as possible.

“ 2. That he shall not give any distinguished preference to any person amongst us; but shall inform the committee of every thing which he may think of advantage relative to his operations.

“ 3. That in case the chief shall be desirous of renouncing his plan, or shall remonstrate to that purpose

“ purpose to the committee, or even shall converse
 “ to that effect with any individual separately, he
 “ shall be punished, *ipso facto*, with death, and the
 “ committee shall have the right to execute this
 “ sentence in whatever manner may to them appear
 “ the most expedient.

“ 4. That after the chief shall have made his
 “ oath he shall receive a separate oath from each of
 “ the individuals who form the society, and that
 “ the oath shall in substance be as follows:

“ 1. That each member of the society shall em-
 “ ploy his utmost exertions and abilities, at the
 “ peril of his life, to co-operate in the execution of
 “ the plan which shall be adopted for the obtain-
 “ ing of liberty.

“ 2. That having acknowledged the authority of
 “ his chief, he shall obey him with the most per-
 “ fect submission; and that as he finds himself, by in-
 “ justice and despotism, discarded from all civil and
 “ political society, he will, without any restriction,
 “ obey the orders of the chief elect, acknowledging
 “ him as his sovereign and master.

“ 3. That having rendered himself, by virtue of
 “ his oath, worthy of the confidence of the society
 “ without any restriction, each individual shall en-
 “ gage to keep the most profound secrecy con-
 “ cerning every thing which shall have been treat-
 “ ed or determined from that day forwards; and
 “ in case he shall have betrayed this engagement,
 “ he shall acknowledge himself, *ipso facto*, culpable,
 “ and worthy to be punished with death, to which
 “ he shall submit from the moment of his apostacy
 “ from the present oath; submitting himself like-
 “ wise by the present act to be the instrument of
 “ execution of every sentence of death which shall
 “ be decreed in the committee against any other of
 “ the society, whomsoever he may be.”

“ After
 sloping “

" After taking this oath, let the chief, with all members of the society, establish a fourth article, as follows :

" 4. That if, in case of treachery, either the chief, or any other person of the society, shall fall into the hands of government, he shall keep the most profound secrecy respecting their union; and the association shall use the means, at the risk and peril of their lives, to take that person out of the hands of government, either by rescuing him by open force, or by providing him with poison or arms to deliver himself from oppression."

This speech was received with veneration, and I was convinced, from the countenance of my auditors, that they approved my propositions. In consequence thereof every one took paper, and wrote a name according to his choice. Upon opening the papers, seven bore my name, and my paper that of Crustiew, which determined them to nominate Mr. Crustiew my second. We then proceeded to take our oaths, and I received those of the other members of the society.

Such was the conclusion of my second day at Kamchatka. After having fixed the meeting of the committee for the 10th of the month, Mr. Crustiew declared that he had several friends to propose as members of our society, to which I acceded, and fixed the time of their reception on the 10th.

On the 6th we met, in order to proceed in a body to pay our compliments to the governor. He received us, and after having been informed that I spoke several languages, he appointed me master of languages to his son and his three daughters, in consideration of which he dispensed me from all public work, and ordered the same subsistence to be allowed me as to the soldiers of the garrison. After having acquainted me with this determination,

tion, he called his children, and exhorted them to be diligent, and learn whatever I might teach them.

After this ceremony we waited upon the chancellor, who admitted us in the same manner. We found him playing at chess with Kolosoff, hettman of the Cossacks. He ordered us to wait till the game was finished. I approached the table and examined the state of the game. My particular attention surprized the chancellor, who enquired if I understood chess; I answered in the affirmative. Soon after finding his own game desperate, and, in his opinion, lost, he told me he would give me fifty roubles if I could win it. The hettman protested that he would not play with an exile, as it was contrary to the laws, but the chancellor maintained that he might legally do it, as the laws prohibited only the communication with exiles; and at last the hettman, rather piqued at the chancellor's intimation that he was fearful of losing the party, consented that I should play the game out. He had the advantage of a castle, a knight, and two pawns. At the third move I uncovered my castle, which stood behind a bishop and opposite to the queen, at the same time that I checked the king with my bishop. The loss of the queen secured the game in my favour, so that I soon gave the check-mate.

At the end of the game I found that it had been played for five hundred roubles on a side, and I immediately received the fifty roubles. The hettman being vexed, was desirous of having his revenge, and the chancellor consented to find money for my stake. He dismissed my companions, after presenting them with two bottles of brandy, and detained me to play at chess. I won three successive games, which put two thousand roubles into the chancellor's pocket, of which, my part amounted

to

to one hundred and fifty roubles. At dinner time I retired, and soon after, with great surprize, perceived the hettman clofe behind me. He called after me very civilly, and informed me that he had a project in his head, in which, if I would join, I should find it much to my advantage; but for my part I was apprehensive that his loss might make him my enemy, and therefore proposed to restore the hundred and fifty roubles which had been presented to me; at the same time making the best excuses I could for what had happened. But my fears were soon dissipated when he discovered his project; which was, that I should play against some rich merchants, who had won large sums of money of him, and that if I had the good fortune to win he was certain of gaining an immense sum, of which the fifth part should be paid me on the spot.

The situation in which I found myself, and the want of money to carry my enterprize into execution, made me determine to accept his proposition, and to assure him of the fortune of his rivals in this play. As soon as I had given my consent, he forgot my situation as an exile, and pressed me to go to dinner with him. I was received by his family with great respect; for he presented me in the character of an illustrious, though unfortunate gentleman, to whom his family owed great obligations. At dinner we were surprized by several of the chief people of the town, but my entertainer, who, by his charge, was the third person in the government, knew so well how to manage the conversation, that he perfectly established that degree of consideration, which he was desirous I should possess. At my departure he caused me to be supplied with provisions, namely, butter, salt meat, rice, and brandy sufficient, at least, to entertain my company five days.

When I arrived at home I assembled my companions, and related to them every thing that had happened.

happened. At the sight of my provisions and the hundred and fifty roubles, they thought they beheld providence in person; their hopes were still more highly elevated, when I informed them of the plot in which I had engaged with the hettman, against the merchants. Our evening thus passed with great chearfulness, and many were the castles we built in the air. As soon as the company was gone, I employed myself in writing out copies in the Latin, French, and German languages, for my scholars; and afterwards, enlivened by hope, I retired to rest, and enjoyed the most refreshing sleep.

C H A P. VI.

The Count enters upon his office as language-master.—The Governor presents him with a female slave, and a sledge drawn by dogs.—A proposal made to him by some of the chief gentlemen of the town to establish a school.—A party at chess.—An evening's entertainment.—Partiality of Miss Aphanasia Nilow, the Governor's youngest daughter, for the Count.—Madame Nilow approves her attachment.

ON the 7th, my late rising obliged me to hasten to the governor's, where I found the younger part of the family assembled in the hall. I gave them the copies, and caused them to spell the words. The youngest of three daughters, whose name was Aphanasia, who was sixteen years of age, proposed many questions concerning my thoughts in my present situation. Her questions convinced me that her father had given them some information concerning my birth and misfortunes. I therefore gave them an account of my adventures, at which my scholars appeared to be highly affected, but the youngest wept very much. She was a beautiful girl, and her sensibility created much emotion in my mind;—but, alas, I was an exile.

The governor afterwards came in and attended to my instructions. He appeared exceedingly well satisfied with my method, and informed me that he intended to present me with a Kamchatka female slave, a sledge, and two dogs. I thanked him for this favour, but observed, that as an exile I could not possess any property, and that I was resolved to endure my fate with patience. He persisted, however, in his resolution, and observed that the senate would
not

happened. - At the sight of my provisions and the hundred and fifty roubles, they thought they beheld providence in person; their hopes were still more highly elevated, when I informed them of the plot in which I had engaged with the hettman, against the merchants. Our evening thus passed with great chearfulness, and many were the castles we built in the air. As soon as the company was gone, I employed myself in writing out copies in the Latin, French, and German languages, for my scholars; and afterwards, enlivened by hope, I retired to rest, and enjoyed the most refreshing sleep.

C H A P. VI.

The Count enters upon his office as language-master.—

The Governor presents him with a female slave, and a sledge drawn by dogs.—A proposal made to him by some of the chief gentlemen of the town to establish a school.—A party at chess.—An evening's entertainment.—Partiality of Miss Aphanasia Nilow, the Governor's youngest daughter, for the Count.—Madame Nilow approves her attachment.

ON the 7th, my late rising obliged me to hasten to the governor's, where I found the younger part of the family assembled in the hall. I gave them the copies, and caused them to spell the words. The youngest of three daughters, whose name was Aphanasia, who was sixteen years of age, proposed many questions concerning my thoughts in my present situation. Her questions convinced me that her father had given them some information concerning my birth and misfortunes. I therefore gave them an account of my adventures, at which my scholars appeared to be highly affected, but the youngest wept very much. She was a beautiful girl, and her sensibility created much emotion in my mind;—but, alas, I was an exile.

The governor afterwards came in and attended to my instructions. He appeared exceedingly well satisfied with my method, and informed me that he intended to present me with a Kamchatka female slave, a sledge, and two dogs. I thanked him for this favour, but observed, that as an exile I could not possess any property, and that I was resolved to endure my fate with patience. He persisted, however, in his resolution, and observed that the senate would
not

not be displeased at his kindness for me, after having received an account of the essential service I had done the state, by preserving the vessel, with the lives and fortunes of the subjects of the Empress. The goodness of his disposition affected me greatly, and I thanked him with the utmost sincerity; after which I took my leave. But he detained me a short time, and ordered a sledge to be harnessed, which he put into my hands, with a conductor, whom he ordered to obey me.

When I arrived with this new equipage, my companions cried out that miracles were revived; and more especially, when I informed them of all that the governor had said, they verily believed themselves delivered from the yoke of slavery under my protection. But Mr. Panow surprized the assembly by observing, that they had no such reason to rejoice, for the governor's benevolence would slacken my zeal, and that afterwards, at the first change of a governor, we should remain exposed to the barbarians. He was going on with his discourse, when I judged it proper to interrupt him by renewing my oath, with every assurance of my being devoted to the good of the society.

After dinner I received a visit from the hettman, who was accompanied by Messrs. Casarinow and Roscurakow, two principal merchants. After the first civilities they proposed to me to establish a school for languages, arithmetic, and geography; and to enable me to undertake this, they made an offer of putting together an entire house, newly built, at any place where I might choose to establish a public school. I accepted their offers, on condition that they should persuade the governor to send his children to this school: because, as I was obliged to repair every day to the governor's, I should not otherwise have it in my power to superintend the public school. We concluded our arrangement with the condition, that I should receive five roubles
per

per month for each child; that they should pay me besides half a rouble for wood and lights; and lastly that they should contribute together to furnish my house with moveables and a stock of provisions, together with a servant to dress my victuals.

The more I reflected on the favourable change of my situation, the more my hope increased that I should be able in safety to execute the plan I had formed for my deliverance. For the distressing image of a wife whom I loved, and who in my absence, in all probability, had given birth to an infant, presented itself constantly to my mind, and permitted me to receive no perfect satisfaction. Absorbed in these reflections, I paid little attention to the conversation between my companions and our guests; but the hettman roused me out of my reverie, by requesting me to come and dine with him and play a few games at chess. He informed me, that he had proposed this party to Mr. Casarinow, then present, who would take no denial, and that each game should be for three hundred roubles, of which he would stake on my side one hundred and twenty, and the chancellor the same sum, and that, if I won, the sixty roubles of each game would belong to me; but that, in case I lost, they would bear my loss. Mr. Casarinow consented to the engagement, on condition that fifty games should be played; and that he might be permitted to make an association, any one of whom should be at liberty to play against me, as in like manner it should be permitted either for the chancellor or the hettman to play in my stead. The hettman replied, that he would not stipulate but for himself: it was therefore determined to wait on the chancellor, to whom we accordingly went. This gentleman performed his part very dexterously, by making some difficulties at first, though at last he consented, and the articles were written down and signed, with the additional stipulation, that ready money should be paid down at the end of each game.

The

The agreement was ratified by an evening's entertainment, at which fifty persons were present; and the governor himself, with his family, came in. On his arrival the music was sent for, and dances began. As for myself, I was a friendly spectator of the whole; and, being now upon terms of great familiarity with every one, I requested the chancellor to send a few bottles to my companions. He invited them all, appointing a chamber for their use, where they could see every thing that passed without communicating with the assembly, contrary to the laws. During the whole entertainment, my scholar Aphanasia never quitted me but to join in the dance, which she did very gracefully; her mother came up to us once, and whispered to me, I think your scholar will become your friend; have an eye over her: I am a kind mother.—She spoke to me in very good German; and as it was the first time I had conversed with her I felt some embarrassment, but soon recollecting myself, I assured her of my respect and inviolable attachment. The governor, observing me in conversation with the mother and the daughter, likewise came up to us, and asked the subject of our conversation; but Madame de Nilow prevented my answering, by saying, that she was enquiring whether I could not teach her daughter music. This mezzotermينو delivered me from all apprehension, and a short time afterwards the governor and his lady retired. Miss Nilow returned to me, and informed me that her father had consented to the establishment of a public school, and that consequently she, with her sisters and brothers, should often have the pleasure of visiting her master. It is impossible to describe the amiable and graceful manner of this charming girl. Two hours after midnight I attended my scholar, with her sisters, to the governor's house, and afterwards returned home.

C H A P.

C H A P. VII.

A building erected for a school.—Conversation with Madame Nilow. Profits arising from the Count's skill at Chess.—Miss Aphanasia converses with the Count.—The society of exiles reinforced.—Hunting of the bear.

ON the 8th my friend Crustiew came to me at day-break, to enquire what situation I had chosen for the new edifice, and on going out of my hut I found almost all the pieces of wood for the building ready. As soon as I had marked out the situation the workmen began to put them together. After breakfast I repaired to the governor's house to give the usual lessons to my scholars, whom I found ready, with the alphabet in their hands. When they had said their spelling lessons, they requested me to write some German and French words in the Russian characters. It fortunately happened that I was provided with a grammar of the Russian, German and French languages, which I had found among the books of my friend. I put this into their hands, with some instructions for the use of it. As soon as the lessons were ended, I was asked a thousand questions concerning my country, its manners, customs, &c.

When I was preparing to depart, the governor's lady arrived, and after dismissing her children, made me sit down beside her. She informed me, that she was the daughter of a Swedish colonel, exiled into Siberia; that her mother had changed her religion, and that she had married Mr. Nilow, at that time lieutenant-colonel, a worthy man, but greatly addicted

addicted to drinking, the excess of which rendered him brutal and insupportable; that she enjoyed no pleasure excepting that of seeing her family grow up around her, though at the present instant, after having suffered the mortification of seeing her two eldest daughters married to two officers who were addicted to gluttony and drinking in the most disgusting excess, she could not but lament the fate of the youngest, who was intended by her father to be married to a certain kuzma, one of the most disagreeable persons in the universe. She therefore intreated me to endeavour to gain the confidence of the governor, and to use my utmost exertions to change this resolution. My reply to this good mother was, that I would do my best, and that at all times she should find me obedient to her commands. Soon after I took my leave, and returned home, where I found an invitation from Mr. Hettman to form a party at chess.

In the mean time we dined, and after dinner Mr. Crustiew presented to me the candidates for reception into our society. About four o'clock a woman came to take my measure for shirts and clothes, according to the custom of this country, where the women perform the taylor's business. At seven o'clock I waited on the chancellor, where I found five merchants. We played five games at chess, four of which I won, and after receiving one hundred and eighty roubles, I took my leave.

On the 9th a merchant, named Csulosnikow, hearing that I possessed some money, proposed to me to play a couple of games with him, but declared that he would not play for less than two hundred roubles a game. I accepted his proposal, only deferring it till afternoon, because I was obliged to attend my scholars at the governor's house. When I entered the hall I was surprized to find Miss Aphanasia absent, and still more to hear that

that she was ill in bed, but being desirous of taking her lesson, she had asked leave for me to come to her, which her mother had granted. I was accordingly introduced into her chamber, where this amiable girl disclosed the sentiments of her heart with such openness and simplicity, that the Russian language at that moment appeared to me the most musical in the universe. Our conversation was interrupted by the appearance of Madame Nilow. I therefore took my leave, and on my arrival at home I found Mr. Csulopikow, who lost three games at chess. The rest of the day was employed in settling the order for the reception of the candidates to be presented by Mr. Crustiew. We agreed that the council of eight should alone be entrusted with the secrets, and that such other persons as might in future be admitted should be informed only of such particulars as the council might judge necessary to communicate to them to secure their confidence. At this meeting, therefore, the form of the oath was drawn up, and we employed the rest of the evening in preparing an entertainment.

On the 10th, at day-break, Mr. Crustiew went in search of his candidates, and at nine in the morning, returned with them. Their names were as follow:

Demetrius Kuzneczow, a free Russian merchant.

Aphanasi Kumin, Captain of the Cossacks, free.

Andrew Gurcinin, Chamberlain of the Empress

Elizabeth, an exile.

John Sibaew, Captain of the Hunters, free.

Alexis Protopop, Archdeacon of the Church, free.

Levonti Popow, Captain of the Hunters, free.

John Csurin, brother to the captain of a merchant ship, free.

Magnus Meder, of the Admiralty, exiled twenty years.

John Wilkow, a free hunter.

VOL. I.

H

Cassimir

Cassimir Biełki, a Polish starost, exiled fifteen years before.

Gregory Lobczow, Colonel of Infantry, an exile.

Heraclius Prince Zadskoy, exiled eighteen years before.

Julian Brandorp, a Swede, exiled six years before.

Nicholas Srebernikow, Captain of a regiment of Guards, an exile.

Andrew Biatzinin, an exile.

At eleven in the morning the candidates were introduced to the committee, and the oaths and engagements were read to them. They immediately took the oath, and signed their engagements; but in order to confirm their sanction we determined that all those who were of the Russian religion should go to confession, and take the sacrament to corroborate their oaths. In consequence of this order Mr. Crustiew attended them to the church, where their confessions were received, and the sacrament was administered to them by the Protopop. After their return we celebrated our little feast, and the governor with his family, the chancellor, and the hettman, with several other principal persons of the town, came to us in the evening, and honoured our assembly with a visit, which fixed the epoch of the independence of the exiles: For the governor, being extremely drunk, swore, that he acknowledged me as chief of the exiles, and commanded the chancellor to register an act in the chancery, to authenticate this nomination; at the same time promising to write a representation in my favour to government, in order that I might be employed in the service of the state: The chancellor and the hettman supported the intentions of the governor, and had the satisfaction to win near seven thousand roubles from the merchants, at

chefs,

chefs, who by this means paid the charges of our entertainment.

On the 11th we determined to go in chace of the bear, and obtained permission from the governor of four days absence. On this day I received a considerable present in linen and some pieces of plate from Mr. Nilow. On the 12th we departed, to the number of sixteen, well armed, with eight sledges, and went down the river which was frozen. At the distance of twenty-eight verstes we stopped at the dwelling of the tajou or chief of Csekawka: he gave us an account of the several visits he had received from the bears in his neighbourhood, and entertained us and our dogs with a dinner; after which he conducted us to a brook which fell into the river of Kamchatka. But the instant that he perceived three bears at play on the banks of this rivulet, he earnestly entreated us to retire, assuring us that these creatures would be the death of us. After delivering this advice, he decamped, and we approached our enemies 'till within the distance of musquet shot, when we discharged our fire-arms, and wounded them. Enraged with their wounds, they came forward to attack us with the utmost fury. It was a fortunate circumstance that my companions were accustomed to this chace. They met the bears, and, after a long combat, slew the whole three; for none of them chose to quit the field of battle.

The following circumstances are proper to be taken notice of respecting this manner of hunting. At sight of a bear one of the hunters advances to begin the attack, which he does by presenting his left arm to the animal, having previously secured himself by thick pieces of wood, fastened lengthways upon the arm, in order that the bear may not break it at the first gripe. The moment the animal seizes the arm the hunter strikes him with a lance within the left shoulder. After this stroke the other hunters

continually run their lances into the body of the animal, who often breaks the weapons, and, if the first stroke be not effectual, throws down his opponent and strangles, or at least maims him.

After having slain these three bears we laid them on our sledges and returned towards Csekawka. At the half distance we met the tajou with twenty natives of Kamchatka, armed with lances and bows. They acquainted us that they came to assist us; but when they saw the dead bears they sung our praise, and conducted us back in triumph. The first care of the Kamchatka men was to skin the bears, for which they gave us twenty-six martins skins, and eight foxes skins for the flesh. This bargain was very agreeable to us, and we resolved to sally forth by moon-light to make another prize. We succeeded very well in this attempt likewise, for we slew five others, but Sibaew was wounded.

Among these bears there was one of prodigious size, and as white as snow. We set apart his skin as a present for the governor; and proposed to apply the four others to our own use as mattrasses. We therefore laid them on our sledges, and returned towards our habitations, where we skinned them, and salted the flesh; after which we carried our present to the governor, who was highly pleased with it.

C H A P. VIII.

Public school opened.—The society of exiles meet on business relative to their escape by sea.—Ghefs.—The Count composes charts of the coasts and islands adjoining to Kamchatka.—Dangerous consequence of the affair last debated in the society of exiles.—Averted by the Count, who narrowly escapes assassination.—His enemy punished.

ON the 14th, the school-room being ready, I received my scholars, and made choice of Mess. Crustiew and Panow as my assistants. At four in the afternoon the governor's children appeared. The number of my scholars amounted to twenty-three, among which were three merchants, who came to learn arithmetic.

On the 16th Sibaew requested me to call a meeting, in order to communicate a discovery relative to our enterprize. I appointed that very night at eleven o'clock. When the committee was assembled, I demanded of him the communication he had to make, which was as follows.

In the course of the preceding month of August, Cfulosnikow, sailed from Ochoczka with a vessel of one hundred and fifty tons, armed, and bound to the Aleuthes islands, to catch beavers. His crew consisted of twenty-eight hunters, who had never been at sea before, and these being overtaken by a violent tempest, had run the vessel ashore. Cfulosnikow in this juncture had forced the people to work without intermission to get the vessel off the ground; and upon their refusal to persevere, had obtained military assistance from the governor to compel them. In consequence of which treatment they had

unanimously

unanimously determined, first to get the vessel off, and afterwards to make their escape with her out of slavery. Mr. Sibaew having been consulted by them on this affair, took advantage of their disposition to insinuate that they had no chance of succeeding in their attempt unless they could engage me to take the command, which they immediately resolved to do, and entreated him to inform me of their determination. He therefore thought it incumbent on him to acquaint the committee, that they might determine what was properest to be done in these circumstances, which in his own opinion he thought very advantageous to our interests; as by increasing our number we might put ourselves in a situation to employ open force in seizing a vessel, and making our escape with our arms in our hands, in case we could not succeed by stratagem.

This proposition appeared very interesting to us. The opinion of every person present was therefore taken, and the society was at last induced to adopt mine, which was as follows:

That Sibaew should return for answer to them, that I was greatly affected with the sufferings they endured, but that having already been betrayed, once before, in my endeavours to assist the unfortunate, I could not trust to their proposals. For it would be sufficient if out of twenty-eight there should be one apostate who might betray me; and as the enterprize was of the nature of a revolt, they would be punished by being condemned for life to the mines. I recommended that no other answer should be made them on my part but this; but I engaged Sibaew to encourage them in their disposition to quit Kamchatka, and persuade them to use every means of gaining my confidence, while I reserved to myself the conduct and management of their plot when it should be brought near to an issue.

On

On the 17th, in the morning, Sibaew arrived with two of the principal persons of the crew of Mr. Czulofnikow, the one named Lapin, who was master, and the other Parencfin, who was carpenter. They both threw themselves at my feet as soon as they entered, and conjured me not to abandon them in their enterprize. They observed, that their resolution ought to be agreeable to me, as I should thereby secure my liberty; and they offered to engage themselves by oath to be faithful and obedient to me in all my commands, and to follow me to the end of the world. I continued to urge difficulties until they had assured me that they would engage themselves by the most sacred oath, and take the holy communion to corroborate every engagement into which I might think proper to require them to enter. This resolution determined me to give them some hopes that I would accept the charge, provided they engaged their companions to follow my fortunes under the same oath. For which purpose I told them, that as soon as they were all agreed, they might come to me, in order to execute their oath of union.

After their departure, I assembled my companions, and communicated to them the agreement I had made with the chiefs of Czulofnikow's people. The steps I had taken were approved, and the company finding themselves reinforced by twenty-eight strong, robust and determined men, no longer doubted of success. We agreed from that day forward to busy ourselves in making cartridges, and preparing our arms. Each of us was directed to provide a musquet, a pair of pistols, a sabre, a lance, and sixty cartridges.

On the 18th I passed the day with the chancellor in playing at chess, and I won seven games. On my return I found Mr. Norin, lieutenant of the garrison, who asked me to lend him five hundred roubles, which

which he wanted to fit himself out, as he was nominated commander, at Nisnioftrogg. I promised to comply with his request, on condition that he gave me his word of honour to behave with humanity towards the unfortunate exiles dwelling within the limits of his jurisdiction. He accompanied me home, where I put the five hundred roubles into his hand, and received in return his protestations of friendship and gratitude. My companions were much concerned at my liberality; but when I assured them that I had near five thousand roubles in my box, they found themselves more at ease in that respect.

On the 19th the chancellor desired me to compose a reduced chart of the Kurilles and Aleuthes islands, together with the coasts of Kamchatka, and Ochoczka; and, in order that I might obtain the necessary information, he gave me permission to take out of the archives whatever pieces I might find relative to the subject. As this business tended to divert my wearisome situation, and, at the same time, to supply me with the knowledge which was requisite to the execution of my project, I undertook it very willingly; and on that very day I received out of the Chancery several journals and relations of sea voyages, made either by the officers in the Imperial Russian service, or by individuals. At the first perusal, however, I was convinced that I could advance nothing with certainty, except such articles as I found in the journals of Spanberg, Bering and Tsurikow.

On the 20th Madame de Nilow pressed me much to teach her daughter music. Unfortunately, however, my whole knowledge of this art consisted in playing the harp, an instrument which it would have been a miracle to have found in Kamchatka. Nevertheless, to please this lady, I promised to make one; though I had never handled any cabinet-makers

makers tools. On my return home I consulted with my friends, concerning the accomplishment of my promise; and, after I had made a model, Mr. Panow undertook to assist me in the construction of the instrument; Mr. Crustiew engaged to make the strings with the entrails of dogs and rein deer, and Mr. Stephanow promised to make all the iron screws.

On the 21st, Mr. Csulofnikow, the merchant, came to me, and reproached me with having excited his crew to mutiny, and threatened that, if I did not point out the ringleaders to him, he would directly go and complain to the governor, and demand an order for my imprisonment. The direct and assured manner in which this man made his attack, led me to fear some treachery on the part of his people; but, as it was necessary to avoid every appearance of confusion, I replied, that he must be out of his senses to accuse me with so stupid an undertaking. I admitted that his people had applied to me for an engagement to build my house, and that I had made a bargain with them, which, however, I would willingly cancel, if the governor judged it inconvenient. I assured him that I entered into this explanation, not with a view to justify myself to him, whom I despised too much to think of making any reply to his accusations; but that I did it to make him blush at his want of humanity. I moreover assured him, that I should lose no time in waiting on the governor, and making him acquainted with the execrable treatment with which he pursued his people, who, though unable to subsist without working, were deprived even of that resource, as far as his power could go; and that, as to myself, I should soon find an opportunity to punish him for his insolence, in having dared to attribute such proceedings to me.

During

During our conversation, several of my companions came up; and when informed of the subject of our discourse, they attributed his proceeding to a desire of avenging himself for the loss of a sum of money against me at chess. The contest soon became warm, and terminated in a shower of blows, which fell to his share.

To prevent the bad consequences of this adventure, I immediately waited upon the governor and informed him of the accusation of Csulosnikow, not forgetting to mention the insolence of his behaviour. The governor, irritated by the representations of his lady and the rest of his family, sent a serjeant in search of Csulosnikow, and the moment he appeared, without suffering him to speak, he declared to him, that if he ever insulted me in future, he would send him to prison, and prosecute him for having lost the vessel entrusted to his care; and that since he had information that the vessel could not be got off, he would discharge his crew from their contract, and give them full liberty to enter on board of any other vessel. The governor accordingly sent his officer to the chancellor, in order that his commands might be carried into execution; and poor Csulosnikow found himself obliged to submit without speaking a word.

I thanked the governor, and returned homewards, but had scarcely proceeded one-third of the way before I was attacked by Csulosnikow and his cousin, with two stout bludgeons and drawn knives. I had no other arms than a stick, and was at a distance from every place of assistance. However I set myself in a state of defence with my back against a store house, and in this situation I received many strokes on the arm. One of my blows was so lucky as to fall on the head of Csulosnikow's companion, and extended him upon the earth; upon which, having only one to deal with, I attacked my man with fury,
broke

broke my staff, and then flew upon him with my fists. At the first onset I had the good fortune to strike him such a violent blow that he vomited blood, and begged his life, which I granted at the same time that I reproached him with his treachery. I promised, however, not to speak of this adventure to the governor.

After I had left him and was proceeding on my way, I met Sibaew, who seeing me all bloody with several contusions on my head, enquired what had happened, and upon being informed, he ran to the governor's house to carry the news. The governor immediately sent a detachment to seize Csulosnikow and his cousin, the latter of whom died that afternoon, by the fracture of his skull. Csulosnikow was condemned to six months public labour, and his whole property confiscated to the use of the state and the church. For my part it was with great difficulty that I reached home, and notwithstanding every care, I was obliged to keep my bed ten days, during which time I received continual visits from the chiefs of the country, and especially the family of the governor, which appeared to be highly interested in my welfare.

C H A P. IX.

The exiles narrowly escape poisoning, on New Year's Day.—Discovery of the author, who discloses their project, as communicated to him by one of their number.—The exiles meet, and put the traitor to death in the night.—Further enquiries made by government, which are rendered abortive by an accidental circumstance.

ON the 31st of January, 1771, we paid our respects to the governor and other principal persons, and afterwards assembled, in order to make a kind of entertainment. We had received from several merchants, presents of tea and sugar, with which we regaled ourselves. But this pleasure cost us dear; for in a quarter of an hour after we were seized with violent cholics and vomiting. Mr. Parnow was the first who assured us that we were poisoned, for he affirmed that he had observed many of the pieces of sugar tasted salt. In consequence of this supposition, each of us drank a large quantity of whale oil. It is impossible to describe our sufferings; some were affected more than others, and as to myself, who had only taken one cup of tea, I found, after I had taken the oil, that my pains disappeared with only a trembling in all my limbs. But my utmost exertions were required to attend my other companions, consisting of fourteen persons, many of whom vomited blood.

During this crisis, several of our companions came to see us, who, when they found what had happened, made haste to bring a quantity of the rein deer's milk, which at last mitigated our pains,

pains, and caused them to go off with a trembling of the limbs, excepting Mr. Csurin, who died in the night, and Mr. Panow, who continued scarcely alive. As soon as we had recovered our forces and began to reflect upon this event, we examined the fugar. I gave a piece to a cat, and another piece to a dog, wrapped up in part of a fish. Both these animals were strongly convulsed, and burst in the space of half an hour. This experiment convinced us that Mr. Casarinow, a merchant, had poisoned the fugar; but as it was of importance to search this affair to the bottom, we determined to keep the secret, for which reason we caused the Protopop to attend the burial of Mr. Csurin; and Mr. Panow, finding himself better, was conveyed to his hut.

On the 2d, about noon, I waited on the governor, with the intention of giving him an account of our accident; and, as a proof, I carried with me the fugar loaf. The governor was not inclined to give credit to my declaration, for which reason I offered to convince him by sending for Mr. Casarinow, and proposing to him to drink tea, at the same time that notice might be incidentally taken, that I had presented the governor with a loaf of fugar. For I observed that the behaviour of Casarinow on this occasion, could not fail, either to clear up his innocence, or indicate his guilt. Madame Nilow approved my proposal, and the governor consented to follow my advice, on condition that I should be a witness to what might happen from a neighbouring chamber.

The governor accordingly sent for the chancellor, the hettman, and Casarinow, with two other merchants. The moment I saw them arrive, I retired into the next room, where I could hear every thing that passed. The chancellor and the hettman arrived first, and were informed of the business for which they had been requested to come. They concluded

concluded that Cafarinow had executed this act of revenge against me on account of his having lost a large sum of money at chess, and declared that they did not doubt the truth of my relation. They at the same time observed, that if the fact should be established against Cafarinow, it would be absolutely necessary to punish him with the utmost rigour of the law, by condemning him to labour in the mines, after confiscation of his whole fortune.

Cafarinow at last arrived with the two other merchants: the governor received them politely, and entered into discourse concerning the fitting out of some shipping for the islands Aleuthes, to catch beavers. In the midst of their dialogue the governor proposed tea, which was accepted by the whole company, and he continued his discourse with Cafarinow, by asking if he was not in the habit of taking tea several times in the course of the day, to which he answered in the affirmative. In the mean time the table was set out, and the governor, looking at the sugar-loaf upon the table, expressed his surprize at the generosity of the exiles who arrived last, and observed that he had received as a new-year's gift from me, two sugar loaves, part of which he had now the pleasure of offering to the company. At these words Cafarinow turned pale, and upon the governor's enquiry whether he was ill, he replied he was, and begged leave to retire. The chancellor replied, that his illness would go off after a couple of dishes of tea. He continued, however, to make his excuses, but at last the cup of tea being poured out was presented to him, and the governor insisted on his drinking it. At this crisis the unhappy wretch no longer doubted but that he was discovered, and, throwing himself at the feet of the governor, declared, that he had poisoned the sugar, with the intention of delivering society from such a monster as myself. He assured the governor that

that he would himself be convinced of this after hearing the deposition of a person of the name of Piatfinin, who had discovered to him a plot, which I had formed, to arm all the exiles, and to seize vessels in order to escape from Kamchatka. The governor was too much enraged at the attempt of Casarinow to pay any attention to his words; but committed him to prison, giving orders to the chancellor to proceed to the confiscation of his property, and to register the sentence against him from his own confession, of an attempt to poison.

After having seen this wretched man dragged to jail, and the governor's dinner time being near, I retired. Immediately on my arrival I assembled the council, and afterwards all those who had entered into the oath of confederacy. I declared to them the treason of Piatfinin, who was then present, and the meeting sentenced him to die, but granted him three hours to prepare himself for death: the Protopop attended him, and in the evening he was led out and put to death during the night, by shooting him through the head.

In consequence of the deposition of Casarinow, the chancellor caused a Cossack, of the name of Piatfinin, to come before him, and questioned him concerning the fact. This poor wretch was at a loss what to answer, but absolutely denied ever having spoken to Casarinow, and the chancellor did not give himself the trouble to confront them, but contented himself with inserting in the sentence a declaration of falshood against the deposition of Casarinow.

C H A P. X.

The Count constructs a musical instrument for his scholar Miss Aphanasia.—Members proposed to the society of exiles.—Plan of operation settled.—The Governor proposes a journey.—Large sums of money won at chess, and part presented to the Governor's family.—Miss Apahanasia declares her affection for the Count in the presence of her father, who is exceedingly irritated, but is pacified by his colleagues in office.—The Governor makes the necessary dispositions to reverse the sentence of exile under which the Count was banished.

ON the 3d we were informed of all that had happened at the governor's as well as at the chancery, and it was with the greatest satisfaction that we reflected on our narrow escape from the consequences of treachery and poison. Several of us, however, were afflicted with severe fits of illness afterwards. On this day my musical instrument being finished, and the strings mounted, I carried it to Madame Nilow, and played a few airs upon it before her, and though the sound of the instrument was far from being lively, the melody was thought enchanting by the governor and all his family. From that day forward their youngest daughter Aphanasia was inseparable from her instrument.

On the 4th Mr. Stephanow informed us, that he had discovered that Bocsarow, Ismailow, and Lapin, three young persons apprenticed to the sea, had resolved, together with five or six hunters, to seize a vessel, and escape to the Aleuthes islands, to establish themselves there. He observed, that since the proposal

proposal first came from them he could depend on their fidelity; but as the treachery of Piatfinin had made a strong impression on the minds of my companions, I contented myself with proposing that Mr. Stephanow should form a connection with them, and encourage them in their resolution till we should have decided respecting their admission; but that we should postpone our decision to the time of the execution of our project. My opinion was agreed to, and Mr. Stephanow was entrusted with the management of this affair.

On the 5th a committee was held, to consult on the means of carrying our project into execution. It was here determined that, in order to prevent all suspicion in future, the greater part of our companions should quit the town of Bolsba, and settle at Nisney-ostrog during the winter, under pretence of following the chase: But that in the course of the month of March, or at farthest by the 15th of April, they should rejoin me, in order that as the harbour began at that time to be cleared of ice, and the shipping would be fitting out, we should embrace the earliest opportunity of seizing the first vessel which should be ready, in which we would embark, and leave Kamchatka. In consequence of this resolution it was determined that Messrs. Crustiew and Stephanow should undertake to make sure of part of the crew of the first vessel which might be fitting out, with a view to facilitate the execution of our project; while I should attach myself to the governor, the chancellor, and the hettman, for the purpose of frustrating the effect of the insinuations of the merchants, who, from the treachery of Piatfinin, and several other circumstances, had been confirmed in their suspicions. On the same day I requested the governor's permission of absence for my companions, that they might hunt near Nisney Novogrod, which I obtained. On the 6th they departed, after I had given

them two hundred roubles to facilitate their establishment, together with a letter of recommendation for Mr. Norin, commanding officer at Nisney-ostrog.

On the 7th the governor proposed to me to accompany him on a journey he intended to make in the course of the month, together with his family. I complied with his orders, and promised to be ready, but the chancellor and the hettman, who came in soon after, reproached me for abandoning their parties. The governor, however, assured them that he should not be absent longer than seven or eight days; in consequence of which they determined to make the same journey, on condition that we took a chess board with us. The governor was curious to know the sum they had won at that game since I had borne a part; and, upon making a calculation, it appeared that it amounted to forty-two thousand roubles, in money and furs. The chancellor, to shew his attachment to the governor, asserted, that he had agreed with me to set aside one-tenth part of the profits as a present to the governor's family, which he called me, as well as the hettman, to witness. The governor was highly pleased with this declaration, and immediately caused his daughters to be called, and communicated to them the news of their good fortune; observing, that they were indebted to me, in the first place, for this advantage, and next, to the friendship of the chancellor and the hettman. I perceived that Mr. Hettman was offended at the step the chancellor had taken, for which reason I called him aside, and represented to him that this act of generosity, as well as all the good consequences which might arise from it, would be shared by him, as well as us; and that there still remained a vast field for us to extend our advantages. This assurance set his covetous heart somewhat more at ease.

The

The governor's family expressed their acknowledgments to us ; but Miss Aphanasia added, that she hoped, from the goodness of Mr. Chancellor and Mr. Hettman, that they would interest themselves in my favour, and obtain the abolition of the sentence of my exile, and the necessary grace, in order that I might be employed in some charge under government, that her sincere desire of seeing me happy, and of partaking in my happiness, might be accomplished. At these words the governor flew into a rage, and loaded me with invectives, but the chancellor and hettman remonstrated strongly against the injustice of blaming me for the sentiments of his daughter. They observed it was not impossible but that I might in future possess a charge under government, and in that case the governor could not do better to insure the happiness of his family. Their arguments at length had some effect on the governor, who became calm, and addressed them in these words : Gentlemen, you are witness to the declaration just now made by my daughter, of which I should be much ashamed ; but, since you find it excusable, I pardon her, and undertake to employ my credit in mitigating the sentence of exile against Benyowsky. I therefore request that you will sign an act which I shall propose to you, which, according to the laws of the Czar Peter, discharges every exile from his sentence. This law enacts, that every exile who shall have discovered a plot formed against government, or the chiefs, shall be discharged from the rigour of his sentence. The exile before you has a right to this absolution ; for he has revealed to us the attempt of Casarinow to poison us. Without his declaration neither you nor myself would now have been alive. You cannot therefore dispense with signing this act of absolution, which we will submit to the senate, with our letters of recommendation, for the sake of the

form only: For the ordinances of the Emperor do not prescribe this to be done, but are positive in enacting, that every governor or voivode, president of a college, or chancellor, with the consent of his counsellors, shall be authorized to pronounce this absolution.

This speech of the governor was received like an oracle, and the chancellor invited the governor immediately to call a meeting the following day, to carry his resolution into effect. The hettman made haste to engage Madame Nilow to join them, in order to confirm the governor in this step, who beholding his family at his feet, and the chancellor and the hettman urging every entreaty, consented at last, and complimented me with my liberty.

C H A P. XI.

The Count is in danger of being put to death by his associates.—Their suspicions removed.—An embarrassing dilemma.—Presents made to the Count.—The manner of his absolution from the sentence of exile.—He makes a proposal to the council.—Generous disposition of the chief inhabitants of the town.—Consequences of the Count's advancement.

THIS business was not conducted with secrecy. The governor's family divulged the adventure confusedly, and the whole town was informed of my approaching absolution before I left the governor's house; which I did, after having received orders to appear the following day at the chancery at eleven in the morning. In my way I met many persons who loaded me with compliments, and when I arrived at home, I found Messrs. Panow, Stephanow, Baturin, and Crustiew, who accosted me with some confusion, and informed me that I must appear before the general meeting. I enquired what pressing affair demanded my presence, and observed that I had very agreeable news to communicate to them; but great was my astonishment at the answer of Panow, who informed me that this news would cost me my life, to which he added, that I was a traitor, and that nothing more could be said on an affair which was of sufficient importance to be decided according to the constitution I had myself established.

Surprized at this discourse, I had no time to consider what motives could lead them to act in this manner. It was in vain that I solicited my best friend, Crustiew, to give me some intimation of the business; for he refused, by observing that he was forbidden

forbidden to speak to me, and that it was necessary I should appear before the assembly. I then entered, and the first objects which presented themselves to my sight were two of my associates, armed with sabres, at the door, and a goblet on the table filled with poison. These preparations led me to suppose that I was charged with treachery, and that the proceedings of the governor in my favour had induced my companions to believe that I had accused and betrayed them. On this supposition I demanded leave to speak, and immediately related to them every thing which had passed at the governor's house, together with the decision of the governor. After having ended my discourse, I demanded judgment. Consternation and joy was on every countenance. Mr. Panow advanced towards me the first, and, throwing himself at my feet, entreated my pardon, affirming that he was the author of all that I saw. He informed me, that as he could not believe my connection with the chiefs of the government was simply the effect of accident, he had long suspected me of treachery, and had not ceased to follow my steps; and that he had, on that very morning, followed me, and was convinced of my duplicity, when he heard that, by virtue of the ordinance of the Czar Peter, I was declared to be at liberty: a conviction which inspired him with the resolution of assassinating me; though he had deferred the execution of his purpose, merely with the intention of informing his companions of their danger. That in consequence of his declaration, they had determined to put me to death; but that the preservation of my life was owing to the resolution of Mr. Crustiew, who persuaded the meeting to hear me before they proceeded to the commission of a crime, as he would answer for me at the expence of his life; And as the assurance of Mr. Crustiew was now found to be true, he intreated my

my pardon for his precipitate haste. I embraced this worthy associate, and thanked him for his care, at the same time begging that he would, in future, entertain a better opinion of me.

The fears of the association being thus dissipated, they indulged themselves in the pleasing reflections, how much my liberation would tend to insure the execution of our project. After the rising of the assembly, I consulted with Messrs. Crustiew and Protopop about my apprehensions respecting the governor's daughter and her mother, who seeing me in a state of liberty, pressed me to marry her, which was out of my power, because I was already married, and resolved to prosecute our voyage. The first represented to me, that my marriage being by compulsion, would be unlawful, and that I might clear myself of it on my return into Europe. The second proposed to me to repeat the form of marriage, without entering into any engagement; to which effect he promised to give me a certificate. They both endeavoured to convince me that I needed not hesitate to comply with the solicitations of the governor's family, for the purpose of supporting the common interest. But I resolved to do nothing which might injure my reputation. I therefore declared that I would put off this affair as long as I could, in order to gain time, and that I did not despair of obtaining their consent to defer the marriage till the month of May; at which period, it would be in our power to settle the business in another manner. I confess that in my own mind I felt the utmost regret and uneasiness, to be the instrument of distress to an amiable girl whom I tenderly loved; but the hope that she might, at some future period, be happier in a marriage more suitable to her situation, tended in some measure to render my reflections less afflicting.

I employed

I employed the rest of the day in preparations to make a decent appearance at the chancery, and in the evening I waited upon the chancellor and the hettman to thank them for their favours. Both these gentlemen loaded me with compliments; the chancellor obliged me to accept a traineau, very elegantly constructed of whalebone and gilt, which was drawn by four white dogs, and accompanied by a slave to direct them; and the hettman presented me with a parca, or pelisse of beaver's skin, edged with the skin of the black fox, together with a bonnet of blue velvet bordered with fables.

On the 8th, all the exiles assembled at my house. At ten o'clock the secretary of the chancery, Mr. Szudeikin, came to invite me to the chancery. I accordingly ordered my sledge to be harnessed, and waited upon the chancellor, attended by my companions, who remained at the gate. The secretary introduced me into the council chamber, where I found the governor sitting as president, with eighteen other principal gentlemen, including the chancellor and the hettman. The governor made a very long speech, in order to render me truly sensible of my good fortune, in having fallen into the hands of just and enlightened men. He enlarged much on the mildness of the Russian government, and the excellence of its laws, and concluded his discourse by praising the Empress, whose virtues he extolled to the skies. After his sermon, he ordered the chancellor to read the act of my absolution which was word for word as follows:

“ Actuated by the inviolable duty of justice,
 “ after having materially examined the behaviour of
 “ Augustus Samueloviez, an exile to this place, by
 “ order of the governing senate, and (pursuant to)
 “ the will of her Imperial Highness, Catharine,
 “ Empress and Autocratrix of all the Russias, I do
 “ declare him absolved from the proscription pronounced in the sentence against him, and I do
 “ command

“ command his remission, conformably to the intention of the legislature, explained in the fifth section of the instructions concerning the laws against proscribed and exiled persons; and in order that the causes which have determined me to this proceeding may be perpetuated in justice, I command that the *species facti* be printed beneath the present act, as it has been presented unto me by the chancellor.

“ May it please his excellency the governor to consider the declaration of Augustus Samueloviez, who discovered the attempt to poison, made by Casarinow, and intended to cause the death of the governor, with the principals of the regency, doubtless to carry into execution a design of seizing the government of this province, and depriving the empire of the dominion thereof. That the said Augustus Samueloviez, in order to prove the criminal intention, hazarded his own life, with the lives of several of his companions, by making a trial of the force of the poison on his own person; and that in this manner, at the peril of his life and the lives of his friends, he clearly proved the guilt of the above-named: which evidence was lastly confirmed by Casarinow himself, who confessed his crime. May it therefore please his excellency the governor, conformably to the ordinances of the late Czar Peter, to pronounce the sentence of absolution from exile, in favour of the said Augustus Samueloviez.

Signed, NOVOZILOW, Chancellor,
SZUDEIKIN, Secretary.”

The present order, containing the act of absolution, after being read in council, was exhibited and published conformably to the laws. When the reading was finished, the governor caused me to approach the table, presented me a looking glass, and commanded me to kiss it. This ceremony being finished, he embraced me himself, as did likewise all
the

the other members present at the council; immediately after which, six of the guards entered with a drum, and went out with the secretary in order to publish my absolution through the town. During the time they were executing their commission, I requested the governor's leave to make a proposal, and being permitted to speak, I addressed the council. I assured them that after having rendered a service of this nature to the state, I was determined to employ my whole life in endeavouring to promote the interests of that part of the nation which had interested itself so highly in my welfare; and that in consequence of this disposition, I proposed to establish the cultivation of grain on the southern point of land, and to clear a quantity of pasture ground for the support of cattle, sufficient to maintain the inhabitants of Kamchatka. In order to carry this project into execution, I only requested permission to establish myself with the other exiles in that country, with forty natives as labourers.

The chancellor spoke in favour of my proposal, and the governor consented to report it for discussion at the following meeting. At the breaking up of the council, I was invited to dinner; but before I departed I joined my companions, and explained to them the reason of my proposal, which they found advantageous to the purpose of our union.

Numberless were the compliments I received at dinner. The family of the governor in particular expressed their satisfaction, more especially Miss Aphanasia, who was uncommonly attentive to her dress that day. Twenty-two principal gentlemen of the town were present at this dinner; and one of them, named Casimir, took the lead at the desert, by observing that the praise of good actions ought not to be confined to words, but that as the governor had satisfied the claim of justice, it was the duty of society to bestow the reward of merit; he therefore proposed

proposed that the citizens should unite to contribute a fund for my establishment.

The governor replied to this proposition, that he seriously intended to make my fortune; and that as he designed to give me his daughter in marriage, it was his business to take care of my establishment. But the chancellor contradicted this resolution, by declaring that as the governor had a numerous family, prudence required that he should not impair his own private fortune, and consequently, that he might permit those to act who were desirous of testifying their gratitude to me. The hettman seconded the chancellor, and the governor at last consented that Casimir should pursue his plan, and the governor declared that he would not postpone the marriage between myself and his daughter, longer than till he received orders from the governor general of Irkuczk, from whom he had requested the creation of the office of lieutenant-general of the police in my favour.

The company applauded this resolution, and the evening passed very agreeably to every one but myself. No words can describe the confusion of my mind, when I reflected that I was forced to deceive a charming and innocent girl. I could not conceal my consternation from the penetrating eye of Madame Nilow; and it was with the utmost embarrassment that I contrived to elude her enquiries, by pretending that my apparent affliction was occasioned by the mortification of finding myself separated from the company of the other exiles, for whose friendship I had a very great value. The avowal of so natural a sentiment satisfied her, and she endeavoured to remove these reflections, by promising that she would contrive means to mitigate their hardships; but at the same time she desired me to fix my future residence in the governor's house, where apartments were provided for me in order that I might be at hand to assist in the public business.

This

This proposal greatly embarrassed me: but as I had a thousand reasons for refusing this mark of goodness, I urged every argument I could think of to persuade her to suffer me to reside as usual without the town and fortress, to which she at last consented.

C H A P XII.

Proof of the confidence and attachment of the exiles to the Count. The Governor and Council liberate the exiles. The Count promises to procure the enlargement of the person who attempted to poison him. Farther progress of the exiles in their projects to escape. An entertainment proposed. The gentlemen of the town make presents to the Count. Good effects of the Count's exertions in favour of his enemy.

UPON my return home I found my friends assembled. Many of them shed tears of joy, and declared that, since my good fortune was established, and they could depend on my resolution, they were resolved to recede from the oath of union, in order to avoid exposing my life in future. They protested, that their resolution was unanimous, and that they made this declaration in consequence of their personal attachment to me. I thanked them for this singular mark of friendship, but I declared my fixed and unalterable determination to break the bonds of our slavery, and proposed to them to renew the oath of union. Mr. Panow advised us to send an express to Nisneynovogrod to inform our companions of what had happened, in order that no false account might
cause

cause them to give up the hope of recovering their liberty. Pursuant to this advice, Sibeaw was dispatched, and as the course of business at my school was interrupted by these intervening events, I entrusted the care of it to Mr. Winbladth, major of the confederation, who was taken a prisoner, and exiled with me, and I nominated Mr. Meden as his assistant, who had been long exiled, and was of the same country as the Major, namely, Sweden.

On the 9th Mr. Baturin finished the charts which I had composed of the northern navigation. I presented them to the chancellor, who, after expressing his approbation, laid them before the council, and obtained the governor's consent to send them to the College of Admiralty at Petersburg. On the same day the chancellor presented the report for intrusting me with an establishment to cultivate the land in Lopattka, and, after a short discussion, the governor passed an act in council, by which the assistance of Government was promised me in forming my establishment. By this act I found myself authorized to form a colony of exiles. For the partiality of the governor and principal men of the town was of such admirable service in explaining the ordonnances of the Czar Peter, that the governor thought himself authorized to declare in this act, that all exiles who should repair to the country of Lopattka to form a colony, and settle there for the purpose of cultivating the ground, should be absolved from their sentence of exile; and all this was done in conformity to the sense of the laws, which were found to declare clearly, that every proscribed and exiled person, who shall have rendered essential services to the state, of such a nature as tends to its preservation, shall be capable of receiving the favour of absolution. This proceeding of a whole council convinced me that there are no laws which cannot be interpreted as convenience may dictate. The present day's work completed my satisfaction; for
after

after I had declared in the council that I had disposed all the exiles to undertake the establishment of this new colony, the governor commanded me to bring them, that they might sign their declaration to that effect. I flew home with this order, and assembled my friends, to whom I explained my message. They immediately followed me to the chancery, to sign their submission; in consequence of which the governor caused an amnesty to be published in their favour.

The rapidity of my operations astonished every one; but that which gave me the greatest pleasure was the conviction that no one suspected my intentions. When we left the chancery, we proceeded in a body to return our thanks to the governor, the chancellor, the hettman, and other counsellors: the rest of the day was employed in visiting the merchants and other inhabitants of the town. While I was at the house of Kolosow the hettman, the family of Casarinow intreated me to cause him to be set at liberty, and to procure a repeal of the sentence by which he was condemned to labour in the mines. I promised this afflicted family that I would use my best endeavours, but as I had learned that his fortune, which was confiscated, amounted to more than sixty thousand roubles, I clearly saw how difficult the business would be; for it was certain that I could not save this unhappy man, but on condition that he should give up all thoughts of reclaiming his property. I informed his wife of my fears; but she assured me, that her husband would submit to the sacrifice on condition that the governor would employ him in a voyage to the Kurelles islands to collect the tributes. I therefore promised to obtain his liberty; and as this act of generosity might add greatly to my reputation, I determined to use every effort to overcome such obstacles as might present themselves.

On the same evening I had an opportunity to speak to the chancellor, and accordingly proposed the affair.

affair to him. He was displeased at first; but when I informed him that Casarinow renounced his fortune, he hesitated, and a short time after told me, he had thought of a method to remove every difficulty; but that he would communicate his ideas to the governor and the hettman, and give a decisive answer in the course of twenty-four hours.

On the 10th I assembled a committee, in which, after having discussed our common interests, we resolved to make the necessary preparations to repair to the country of Lopatkka in the month of March, at which place we should pretend to busy ourselves in establishing our colony; And that at a proper opportunity we would request a vessel from the governor to transport our effects and provisions; on the arrival of which we would take possession of it, and bid adieu to this wretched place.

In conformity with this resolution, we determined to collect provisions sufficient for a voyage by sea of three months. At the breaking up of the committee I proposed to give the society an entertainment on the occasion of our absolution from slavery, to which all the principal men of the town should be invited. My proposal was approved of, and Mr. Cruftiew was directed to make every requisite preparation.

About noon Mr. Casimir came to inform me that the meeting of the gentlemen of the town had determined to make me a present of six thousand roubles, one-third ready money, one-third in merchandize, and the rest in provisions and articles of domestic use. I accepted this mark of generosity; and as the message was delivered in writing, I returned my answer in the same manner, taking care to use every expression suitable to the extent of my gratitude.

After the departure of Mr. Casimir I waited upon the governor to dinner, and obtained his permission to give the proposed entertainment at the town-house. It was fixed on the 15th, because the governor was desirous of setting out on his journey on the 16th.

When

When dinner was ended, the chancellor came in, together with the hettman. They conferred a short time with the governor in his closet, after which I was sent for, and was informed that the liberty of Casarinow was granted, on condition that he should immediately go to the Kurelles islands, and remain there two years, which was a sufficient time to repair his loss; for these gentlemen were not at all disposed to restore his fortune. The governor charged me with the message, which I immediately executed. Upon entering the prison, I saw this unhappy man at my feet, intreating my forgiveness for having attempted to take away my life. I interrupted his lamentations, by demanding what reason he could have to hope for favour from me? He replied, by conjuring me to have pity on him, and pardon him on account of his unfortunate family. At length, however, being desirous of removing his apprehensions, I proposed to him the conditions under which I believed I could deliver him from imprisonment. These he accepted with professions of eternal gratitude, and at last, when he was told that I had obtained permission for him to go to the Kurelles islands, he assured me that a single year would be sufficient to re-establish his fortune. Whereupon I declared that he should be set at liberty as soon as the vessels were ready to convey him there. This information transported him with joy. He embraced my feet, and used all the expressions of the most lively sentiments of gratitude.

Being thus assured of Casarinow's readiness to accept the terms proposed, I quitted him to render an account to the governor, who was delighted with his compliance, and ordered the chancellor to expedite him, with the serjeant Cusmina, to the Kurelles islands. I perceived that the governor was desirous of conversing in private with the chancellor and the hettman,

hettman, and therefore took my leave. As I passed through the town I called on the family of Casarinow, and informed them of the favour the governor had granted him. I naturally expected acknowledgment and thanks: but my heart was not proof against the surprize of beholding a family at my feet, who called me their protector and benefactor. Ivan Cforni, who since the affair of Casarinow called no more upon me, came likewise to embrace me, and addressed himself in the following words: "Listen, my friend. I was informed of your attempt as well as Casarinow, and consequently I had as great a right to be your enemy as he. We were partners in the accusation intended to be made against you, but I was not an accomplice in the attempt to poison you. The misfortune which afterwards happened to my relation caused me to swear your destruction. Your generosity to him has reconciled me, and I not only swear to keep all I know in secrecy, but I likewise devote myself to your service in every thing you may require me to do."

This explanation astonished me, but I said no more, in answer, than that I hoped his gratitude would be shewn in forgetting all that had passed. Upon my return I related the incidents of the day to my companions, who rejoiced at the happy situation of our affairs.

C H A P. XIII.

Preparations for marriage.—Singular preliminary custom.—Precautions for preserving secrecy and securing the progress of the undertaking of the exiles during the Count's absence.—Grand projects for creating governments and empires in the north.—An entertainment on the occasion of the freedom of the exiles.

ON the 11th, Madame Nilow sent to desire me to wait upon her, and informed me, that she wished her daughter might do the honours of the entertainment of the 15th, and that she should be publicly declared my future spouse. As I could find no proper excuse, I consented to her request, upon which she caused her daughter to be called, and recommended her to be careful that the business of the day should be conducted in such a manner as to do her honour.

After the departure of her mother, my pretended future spouse reproached me for being more attached to the society of my companions than hers; and I answered her pressing remonstrances by promising to wait upon her as frequently as possible.

About noon, being engaged to dine with the governor, who now called me by no other name than son, he requested me to compose a short description of Kamchatka, in a form proper for the press; as he was desirous of exhibiting proofs of his abilities. I promised to write the work according to his ideas, and engaged to finish it during our journey. He expressed his satisfaction at this promise, and embraced me, saying, that he hoped by this work to obtain the government of Ochoczka. After dinner he informed me in confidence, that the affair of

Casarinow

Casarinow had been worth eighteen thousand roubles to him; but that the rascal would be well replenished by the voyage he was going to make.

In the evening, the governor being invited to sup with Ivan Cforni, I accompanied him with my intended lady. Mr. Proscurakow engaged me to play at chess, and a very strong party was formed. The chancellor and the hettman were on my side; and Proscurakow, Ottlaskow, and Ribnikow, were on the opposite side. The game was for five hundred roubles ready money, twenty dozen martin skins, twelve beavers, and twelve black foxes skins. After a long contest I won the game, as well as three others following. Our play detained us till three in the morning, and my share of the winnings amounted to near eight hundred roubles.

The governor took a pleasure in looking on, and I did not quit the company till about four in the morning, when I attended him to his house, where I offered to take my leave, but was detained on pretence of the danger of accidents. But great was my surprize, when the governor's lady introduced me into the chamber of Miss Aphanasia, where she took her leave, saying, I hope you will be prudent; but as it is proper you should be accustomed to live together, I thought you could not be better lodged than with my daughters; with these words she retired, wishing me a good night. Astonished as I was at this speech and manner of proceeding, so contrary to the customs of Europe, I had ample matter to form systems, but my charming companion did not permit me to employ my thoughts on meditations of this kind. She had so much to say and I to answer, that we passed the time without thinking of sleep, and I did not leave her company till eight in the morning.

When I returned home, I found Mr. Crustiew and my other friends, very uneasy at my absence;

but their apprehensions disappeared as soon as they saw me. The fatigue of the foregoing day required that I should take some repose. I therefore retired to sleep, after reminding Mr. Crustiew of his having undertaken that every preparation should be regularly made for the 15th. When I awoke, at five in the evening, I had the pleasure to see my pretended future spouse beside me, who expressed the most lively apprehensions for my health, and declared that she would not quit me; for which purpose she had already sent to her mother to inform her, that she had found me indisposed, and was resolved to sit up with me. It was to no purpose for me to represent that her attachment to me might injure her in the opinion of her father, for she persisted in her resolution; and during the discussion of this point between us, Madame Nilow's maid arrived, and brought word that her mistress approved the determination of her daughter, and for that reason had sent her servant and her bed; after which message, and the usual enquiries concerning my health, the servant returned. This day passed without any unfavourable incident.

On the 13th, I conducted my pretended future spouse to the governor's, and was received in the most affectionate manner. The governor took me into his closet, begged me to come in future every morning for an hour, to read the reports and letters which he received, in order to make a regular statement of their contents, and draw out the answers or orders. As his desire was a command to me, I endeavoured to perform this task with zeal, and to the utmost of my abilities; after which I took my leave, as I was desirous of passing the day with my companions, in order to regulate certain arrangements necessary to secure our correspondence during my journey.

When I returned home I was complimented by my companions, who presented me with a complete
and

and magnificent habit of red sattin, edged with gold lace and faced with fables, with a pair of buskins very curiously embroidered; at the same time requesting that I would wear it on the 15th. After this prelude, which was attended with every testimony of friendship and regard, I appointed a general meeting to be held after dinner. I exhorted my associates of the committee to be more particularly careful than ever to preserve our secret, as the least indiscretion would ruin us all. I did not conceal from them my fears respecting my absence, for which reason I desired them to make an oath of obedience, without restriction, to the orders of Mr. Crustiew, and to do nothing without his consent: And as I was desirous of maintaining a regular correspondence with Mr. Crustiew, I requested them to appoint me three companions of the ordinary number, who might pretend to be hired by me; in order, that in case of any misfortune or unlucky incident, I might not be unsupported, but might avail myself of their services to send notice to the other associates in time, if any treacherous discovery should come to light. In consequence of my proposal it was determined that Ivan Kudin, George Lapkin, and Nicholas Rubatow, should follow me, each having a sledge and being well armed, and attended by a native on whom he could depend. Mr. Panow added, that he did not think this precaution sufficient, but was desirous that several of the society should offer their services to the governor to hire sledges and to conduct them themselves for his security and convenience. Mr. Panow's proposition was agreed to, and Mr. Kuznezow undertook to propose this affair to the governor. So that as the attendants of Mr. Kuznezow would consist of six sledges, I should by that means have an addition of twelve armed men, which, together with myself and the six others, amounted to

nineteen,

nineteen, a sufficient number to withstand the first check. This precaution being settled, we passed that day and the following evening in an agreeable manner.

On the morning of the 14th, Mr. Hettman came to see me, and intreated me to persuade the governor to send him to Petersburg in the spring, and support his request, that her Imperial Majesty would permit him to form an establishment in the Aleuthes islands, under himself as governor. The ambition of this personage was well known to me, though I could not avoid smiling, in my own mind, at the enthusiasm of the man, who, with very little abilities, was desirous to become a legislator. Nevertheless, as his friendship and good will were necessary to me, I promised to obtain the governor's consent to his request, and engaged to draw up a memorial, on the part of the governor, in support of his proposal. My complaisance led him to profess the strongest attachment to me, to which he added a promise, that on his return I should be invested with the government of Kamchatka, while my future father-in-law should be established at Ochoczk. According to his ideas, our triumvirate was to be unalterable; but as the chancellor was left out of the plan, I proposed to this new governor to confer upon him the government of Kamchatka; observing that I should be contented to attend him to the Aleuthes islands in the quality of second, where I might be of the greatest service to him in the conquest of California, a project which stood foremost in the imagination of Mr. Hettman.

The tone of conviction which I used in saying this to the Hettman, encouraged him to give full scope to his imagination; and the remainder of the conversation clearly proved the extravagance of his ideas, for I could easily perceive that it was with some reluctance that he retained the idea

of

of a state of dependence, while he had it in his power to become a sovereign.

After his departure, I communicated the subject of his visit to my companions, and could not avoid reflecting how little the Russian senate, by whose decree I was sent into exile, were aware of the projects which then employed my mind, and more especially the ideas to which I gave birth, of establishing empires, and robbing the Spaniards of their remote possessions by arranging this chimerical project in writing. Nevertheless it led me to the probability, that at some future time California might be taken by the Russians, and that the Spanish colonies might, sooner or later, become their prey.

About noon I waited on the governor, and gave him an account of the project of the hettman, with so many reasons in its favour, that he declared himself satisfied with it, seduced, no doubt, by the hope of obtaining the government of Ochotsk. After dinner, when the chancellor and hettman arrived, the proposition of the latter was treated of at large, and I saw, with the greatest satisfaction, that all these three personages adopted my plan, which they commissioned me to draw out. It therefore lay with me to create these three governors, to whom I accordingly promised the utmost exertions of my pen in their favour. This day gave me a decided superiority at Kamchatka. Hitherto I had been useful to these three chiefs, but when they adopted a system, the composition of which rested with me, I became more than useful, for I was then indispensably necessary to them. In the evening I retired to enquire concerning the preparations for our entertainment. Mr. Crustiew gave me an ample account, from which I was satisfied that every particular was arranged in the best manner.

On

On the 15th, at nine o'clock, all the exiles came to me, perfectly well and even richly clothed. We proceeded from my house to that of the governor, in twenty-three sledges, each drawn by four dogs, where we were received affectionately. The chancellor and the hettman being present saved us the trouble of going to their houses. The governor gave us a list of persons whom he desired to be admitted. I then detached several parties of my companions to invite the guests, while myself, with Mr. Crustiew and my intended spouse, went to the town-house to give orders. We had eleven musicians, and sixty-seven covers were served up to thirty-five gentlemen and thirty-one ladies, for the young gentlemen and unmarried ladies were invited only to the dance, which followed the entertainment. As the hettman had lent me three pieces of artillery, we fired them off on the arrival of the governor's family. At two o'clock the company sat down to table, and did not rise till five, at which hour the younger part of the company began the dances, which lasted till three. Mr. Kuzneczow insinuated himself so well into the favour of the governor, that his company, and the offer of six sledges to carry the governor's effects and equipages, were accepted of. He immediately informed me of his success; for which I embraced and thanked him with all my heart.

When the governor retired, he told me he would defer his journey till the 17th, as he was desirous of a day's repose after this entertainment; a resolution which was very agreeable to me, as I myself felt the same necessity for an interval of rest.

When the company broke up, Madame Nilow presented her youngest daughter, and declared her my future spouse. This attracted compliments from all sides, with a degree of jealousy from some of the merchants and young officers.

When

When I had seen the governor home, as I excused myself from remaining at his house, Miss Nilow accompanied me home, to look to my health, as she said; and I passed the whole of the 16th within doors, till the evening, about six o'clock, when I conducted my intended lady home, and received the orders of the governor, who placed the whole care of his voyage and the business of a secretary upon me. Our attendants were to consist of nineteen sledges and forty-six persons, and our departure was settled at six in the morning of the 17th.

C H A P. XIV.

A journal of an excursion made by the governor of Bolforezky Ostrogg, in company with the Count de Benyowsky.

THE following is a journal of our travels. On the 17th in the morning, about ten o'clock, we quitted Bolforezky Ostrogg, and arrived at Molerowka, at which place the tajon, being informed of our arrival, regaled us with fish and caviar, and made the governor a present of several furs. The weather was severe and frosty, with an easterly wind in our faces.

On the 18th we left Molerowka, and proceeded to Baniowka, where we were received and entertained by exiles, who likewise made the governor a valuable present of furs.

On the 19th we left Baniowka, and the river of the same name, and, after much labour and fatigue, we arrived at Herebostova. Here the tajon of Koanik complained to the governor, that a soldier of the garrison of Verchney Ostrogg, after having violated his daughter, had slain her. In consequence of this accusation, which was proved, the governor directed me to expedite an order to Verchney Ostrogg, that the said soldier should suffer the knout until he died.

On the 20th we arrived at Chiakollautka, almost martyred by the impetuosity of the wind, and very near being swallowed up by the drifts of snow. We had scarcely entered the jourt of the tajon before it blew a perfect hurricane, and in the morning we found our dwelling buried under the snow. The country

country people exerted themselves to open a passage through the snow, in order to get out. Being desirous of taking a view of the country, I ascended through the hole; but it was impossible to discover the least signs of any house, though I knew that our attendants were lodged in nine different adjacent jouts. The continuance of the hurricane, which considerably augmented the quantity of snow about us, compelled us to remain here till the 25th.

On the 26th, in the morning, we departed, and towards evening arrived at Valowka, where we found certain exiles, whose occupation consisted in making salt in the bay of Avatcha.

On the 27th I accompanied the governor to visit this famous bay. It is a noble basin, into which I observed that a large river and three others emptied themselves, though the Russians affirm the contrary. We afterwards proceeded to visit a store-house situated to the northward of the bay.

On the 28th our attendants joined us, and we passed near the lake of Natafchova, and arrived at Katchoun, where the governor received very considerable presents. Here we were joined by the hettman and the chancellor, whose company served to enliven our conversation.

On the 29th we passed near another lake named Kimak, and proceeded to Alzime. On the 30th we left Alzime, and arrived at Tahallka, where the governor determined to rest. The tajon, who was one of the most considerable in the province, did not fail to regale us with rein deers flesh, the fruit of larac, * and Jukola, which is a kind of fish dried.

On the 2d of February we proceeded to Kronotowa, where I was desirous of seeing the head land

* This word is obscure in the manuscript.

of Kronock, which lay to the eastward of us, while the lake of Kronock lay to the west; but the governor opposed my design, by assuring me that the road was not cleared, and I might probably be buried in the snow. On the 3d we proceeded to Katham, from which place I sent to Nisney Conratiew, to advise my companions of our arrival; and to direct them to bring a present of their finest furs for the governor, the chancellor, and the hettman. On the 4th we arrived through a very bad road, over mountains and precipices, to Chovalova, where we found Mr. Norin, commanding officer at Nisney, together with the principal merchants, waiting for us; who informed the governor that considerable presents were prepared for his arrival in town.

On the 5th, after having passed the river Kame-rath, a part of the exiles presented themselves before the governor, to whom they announced their intention of making presents, and afterwards joined our suite. On the same day, about six in the evening, we arrived at the town or village of Verchney, where the governor alighted at the habitation of the protopop, and I lodged with him; but the others fixed their lodging with the town's people. On the 6th I received orders to forward all the presents to Bolska, and, from a moderate estimation, I found that the governor's journey to Nisney had been worth near seven thousand roubles to him.

We remained in this town till the 13th; and as the severity of the cold did not allow me to make any excursions, I employed my time in drawing up a description of Kamchatka, in order to promote the designs of the governor. My work was interrupted only by the game of chess, which was eagerly studied by every one who was desirous of distinguishing himself from the common rank of people. My winnings at this game amounted to near thirteen thousand roubles, in furs and ready money,

money, which the chancellor and the hettman shared with me.

On the 13th we reached the village of Kamenin, where all my projects would have been overthrown, if a lucky accident had not averted this most imminent danger. On the 14th, in the morning, I came out to direct Mr. Kuzneczow to send an express to our associates at Bolscha, to advise them of our return. As soon as I came out I was accosted by a native, who requested to be introduced to the governor, as he said he had a letter for him from an exile who had been taken ill, and was by that means prevented from waiting on the governor himself. I ordered this man to follow me, and went with him to Kuzneczow, where, after opening the letter, I saw it contained an account of the secrets of our union, from one of the associates named Levantiew. This man came from Nisney to join the governor, and make his report in person; but, happily for our cause, a violent cholic seized him in the middle of his journey, and forced him to adopt the expedient of sending a letter to the governor. Upon this information I ordered Kuzneczow to depart immediately with Ivan Kudrin, and dispatch the traitor. I then rejoined the governor, with whom I breakfasted, after which we proceeded on our journey.

We arrived at Kolutova, where I requested the governor to remain, on pretence of visiting the volcano of Krasnaia. He consented, and on the 15th we proceeded to view this famous volcano. I approached within five toises of its mouth, where a sudden exhalation of sulphureous fume surprized me, and caused me to fall backwards among the hot ashes, which burnt my face. But, fortunately for me, there were several natives of Kamchatka near at hand, who were provided with iron hooks, with which they dragged me out, and, after having rubbed

bed the burned parts with whale oil, they reconducted me to Kolutova, where I found Mr. Kuznec-zow returned from his expedition. He reported, that Levontiew had declared his resolution to his cousin at Nisney, who, not being able to dissuade him from it, had poisoned him in a glass of brandy, which they drank together: and that, on the arrival of Kuznec-zow, this unhappy wretch was at the point of death. He confessed his intention to Kuznec-zow, and entreated, as a favour, that he would put him out of his misery, at the same time that he declared the society had nothing more to fear, since his letter was intercepted; because he had discovered his intention to no one but his cousin, who, faithful to his engagement, had poisoned him. This account gave me great satisfaction, and induced me to press the governor to return; but, as he was determined first to visit Tigilb, nothing could be done but follow him.

On the 16th we arrived at Napana, where I met a foreign exile, whose acquaintance I immediately requested, and was not a little surprized to behold a man of the age of ninety-two years in perfect health. He told me his name was Ehrenschild, a Swedish colonel, who had been exiled forty-nine years before into Siberia, and had dwelt at Kamchatka for twenty-two years. I proposed to him to join us at Bolska, to which he consented, and for which purpose I obtained the governor's permission, but this unfortunate person died a short time after.

On the 17th we arrived at Chippin, where we found the jourts forsaken. On the 18th we arrived at Voloska, which was likewise deserted, and on the 19th we at last arrived at Tigilb, a town and fort which I shall hereafter describe. At this place the governor remained three days, and received considerable presents. On the 22d we proceeded from thence to Galiny. On the 23d we arrived at Belozolova,

lozolova, and on the 24th at Sigican. On the 25th we reached Takout, from whence the governor sent the chancellor and the hettman the next day to Verchney Ostrogg to inspect the military, while he himself, with his attendants, continued his journey towards Bolsha.

On the 27th we arrived at Ivanka, and lastly, on the 28th, at Bolsheretzkoj Ostrogg, where I was received by my friends with that cordiality which can only be found in a society united by indissoluble interests. The fatigue of my journey did not allow me to proceed in copying out the work I had written for the governor, which, for that reason, was not presented till some days after; and as it may convey some information respecting this remote part of the world, I shall insert it in this place.

CHAP.

C H A P. XV.

An abridgment of the history and description of Kamchatka.

THE peninsula of Kamchatka forms the north-east extremity of Asia, extending from the 62d to the 51st degree of north latitude. The western coast of Kamchatka is very sinuous, forming many harbours, and is intersected by many rivers, among which Bolsha is the largest. Vessels from Ochoczk enter this river, which, however, they cannot do with safety but at the time of spring tides, which rise between nine and eleven feet. It is difficult to go up this river on account of its rapid stream and the great number of islands it contains.

Kamchatka, by offering an asylum for our navigators during winter, engages them in the pursuit of discoveries. At the present time it is merely a place of rendezvous, and storehouse for the exchange of rich furs, brought by the hunters from the Kurelles and Aleuthes islands; but in case the sovereign should think proper to establish colonies in those islands, and cultivate a trade with China, Japan, Korea, and Idzo, Kamchatka would become a source of great riches and prosperity to the Russian empire.

This peninsula may likewise serve to establish a communication between the two continents of Asia and America. The only commodious port on the eastern coast is the bay of Avatcha, named Racova. The governor of Kamchatka has built a regular fortress, capable of defending its entrance.

The inhabitants of the torrid zone are indebted to the sun for the art of producing fire, but the northern nations owe this to volcanos. I apprehend

hend these phænomena to be an effect of the central heat of the earth, which bursts forth, and that the sea may contribute to the phænomena by a fermentation, engendered by the saline parts of the waters, filtrated through the earth. Without entering into conjectures respecting the origin of volcanos, I must take notice that there are more than twenty in the peninsula of Kamchatka; of these, the three most celebrated are at Avatcha, Tolbatschz, and the third near the river of Kameralteria. The same principles which have given rise to volcanos have produced a great number of hot springs, which have been found to possess the efficacy of mineral waters. The water which flows from these springs is covered with a black scum, some of which I collected, and found it perfectly adapted for use as India or China ink.

With regard to the fertility of the soil of Kamchatka, after having made many remarks and observations, I cannot avoid contradicting the different accounts which have been delivered at the chancery. All the attempts which have been made to produce grain have been unsuccessful, except on ground prepared by manure. Though some wood is naturally produced, sufficient for the construction of huts, there is none proper to be used in building of shipping. In this respect I can contradict Mr. Steller, who likewise reports, that this country abounds in herbage, and that the cattle are of a prodigious size. If there had been any cattle at Kamchatka in his time their number ought to have increased till the year 1771, in which I made the tour of the place; and throughout the whole of Kamchatka I found only five cows and two bulls, which were fed with the bark of birch nine months in the year, for there is no verdure except between the months of July and September.

VOL. I.

L

Neither

Neither is the climate and the air of Kamchatka so mild as many writers pretend. A continual mist, which covers the whole country, produces scorbutic disorders and other illnesses, which check population. The cold is so extreme that several soldiers were found, during the late winters, frozen on their stands. The long duration of the snow likewise occasions blindness, insomuch that the natives of the country seldom exceed forty years of age before they become blind.

Kamchatka produces metals. Near Avatset I found iron ores, and near Girova the ore of copper. The mountains afford rock chrystal, some specimens of which are green and reddish; the natives of the country use it to make heads for their javelins. The only kind of trees which grow in Kamchatka are a species of bastard fir, cedars, willows, and birch; the cedar affords a grain which the natives are very fond of: the bark of the willows and the birch serves them instead of bread. The only useful plant in this country is the *farana*, which flowers, and affords fruit in the month of August. The natives of Kamchatka make a large provision of this substance, which, together with *cavear*, forms a certain paste, which they think delicious, but upon which I think I never could support life. Besides the *farana*, government has caused another plant to be collected under the name of *Vinovaya*, from which a kind of brandy is distilled, which produces a moderate revenue, but is hurtful in its use, as nothing can equal the poison of this plant. The governor would act very prudently by prohibiting this distillation, and importing a larger quantity of brandy from Europe.

Kamchatka makes no great figure with respect to animals. The first rank belongs to the dog, which serves instead of draught horses, and, after its death, affords a skin for the clothing of man. The dogs

dogs of Kamchatka are large, but active and laborious; they are fed with opana, which is a composition of stale fish and the bark of the birch, but they are most commonly obliged to seek their own food, which they find in the rivers produced by the hot springs, where they find fish.

The fox comes next after the dog; its skin is glossy, and there is no fur in Siberia which can be put in competition with the fox's skin of Kamchatka.

The ram of Kamchatka is excellent food; its skin is highly valued, and its horns are likewise an article of commerce; but of late years the number of this species has greatly diminished.

The sable is very common in Kamchatka, and the natives continually hunt this animal, as do likewise the hunters. The number of sables brought to market last year from Kamchatka amounted to six thousand eight hundred.

The fur of the marmotte is very warm and light.

Bears are very numerous in Kamchatka; their disposition is gentle, and they do no mischief, except in their own defence. The hunters are obliged to hunt the bear for subsistence, but it often happens that they get torn, though the bear very seldom kills a man. It seems as if this animal spared the life of the creature it no longer fears: they have never been known to hurt women. These creatures are fat during the summer and lean in winter.

Amphibious Animals.

The manate resembles a cow in the form of its head. The females have two nipples, and hold their young against their bosoms. The French have named this animal lamenti, from its cry. It has a black rough skin, as thick as the bark of an oak, and

L 2

capable

capable of resisting the stroke of an hatchet. The teeth of the manate are preferred to ivory. Kamchatka affords annually of these between two hundred and fifty and three hundred. The flesh of the manate resembles beef when full grown, and veal when young.

Kamchatka likewise affords beavers. The fur of this creature is as soft as down; its teeth are small and sharp, but its tail short, flat and broad, terminating in a point. Beavers are caught here with the line, and sometimes they are shot under the ice.

The sea-lion is of the size of an ox; its cry is dreadful; but, happily for navigators, it is one of the signs of the vicinity of land during the fogs, which are so common here. The sea-lion is a timid animal; it is struck with the harpoon, or shot with the musket, or bow and arrow.

The sea-calf is found in great abundance near all the islands and headlands of Kamchatka; it never goes far from shore, but enters the mouths of rivers to devour fish. The skin of the sea-calf is used to make buskins. The inhabitants of Kamchatka take this animal with the line.

Kamchatka affords a large quantity of different kinds of fish, from the whale to the smallest species, but the birds of this country are few; and as I know of nothing new with respect to either, I shall here conclude this article:

C H A P XVI.

An account of the natives of Kamchatka, their origin, food, habitations, religion. &c. The narrative of the proceedings of the exiles resumed. Preparations for war. The constitution of the society of exiles altered, consequence thence arising.

THE original people of Kamchatka call themselves Itelmen, which word denotes inhabitants of the country. If we were to attempt to discuss their origin from the construction of their language, we should declare them to be descendants of the Mongal tartars: their figure resembles that people: their hair is black, their beard is thin, and their face broad and flat. This nation possesses no tradition respecting its origin: it was numerous at the arrival of the first Cossacks, but has since greatly diminished.

The natives of Kamchatka have no other subsistence than fish, roots, bear's flesh, and the bark of trees, with water to drink, and sometimes brandy, for which they pay very dear to the merchants.

Though this people is at present cloathed, for which advantage they are indebted to the Européans, it has cost them dear, when placed in the balance against the barbarous and tyrannical treatment they have experienced from their new masters. Their women are exceedingly disposed to luxury, to such a degree, that they do not perform the offices of the kitchen without their gloves on; and they would not, on any account, suffer themselves to be seen by a stranger without their gloves and rouge, which they smear in large quantities upon their hideous countenances. These people dwell in two kinds of houses; their

their winter habitation is called yourth, and that of the summer balagan.

The whole religion of the natives of Kamchatka consists in the belief that their God, having formerly dwelled in Kamchatka, fixed his habitation upon the banks of each river several years, and peopled those places with his children, to whom before his disappearance to establish himself elsewhere, he gave the circumambient country for an inheritance. For this reason they never quit a domain so ancient and unalienable.

The sensations of this people are merely corporeal. Happiness, in their opinion, consists in idleness, and the gratification of the natural appetites. It is impossible to persuade them that any mode of life can be more happy or more agreeable than theirs, and they always consider the manner of living in Russia as worthy of their utmost contempt and disdain.

The inhabitants of Kamchatka have a peculiar custom in contracting marriages; but as this usage is described in the memoir of Spamberg, I shall not repeat it in this place. Every intimacy between the sexes is allowed of, and, according to the principles of the Kamchatka nation, a plurality of wives is allowed; but the Russian government forbids polygamy, in which respect perhaps it tends to depopulate this country.

It is difficult to conceive what reasons could lead to wretched a people, who have nothing either to lose or to gain, to enter into war. But it is very certain that they are strongly addicted to revenge. The object of their wars can be only that of making prisoners, to employ the men in work, and subject the women to their pleasures. There is no doubt, however, but that the Cossacks on their arrival excited troubles and differences among them, in order to profit by their intestine wars. The conquest of the nation has been a very difficult task

task to the Cossacks, for, though feeble in its wretchedness, it has shewn itself terrible in its defence. They have availed themselves of stratagem and treachery when force was unsuccessful; and if it be true that this nation is base, yet the fear of death prevails so little among them, that suicide is very common. There are instances of these people being besieged by the Cossacks in a place of retreat, and, when destitute of all hope of escape, they have first cut the throats of their wives and children, and afterwards killed themselves. The use of muchomor is convenient for this purpose, as a dose of it causes them to die by a profound sleep, which deprives them of all sensation. The muchomor is a kind of champignon, very common in this country; the infusion of which causes drunkenness and hilarity, but, if used to excess, produces strong convulsions, which terminate in death.

After I had presented my abridgment of the history of Kamchatka to the governor, who found it a master-piece in his opinion, excepting that the expressions were not sufficiently free from a foreign manner, I applied all my attention to contrive such measures and precautions as might insure the success of my plan. The two instances of treachery I had experienced made me very uneasy; and as I had to do with people who were governed by the prejudice of religion, I could not take too much precaution to secure myself. In consequence of this, I convened all my associates on the 1st of March, about six in the evening. I opened the committee by giving an account of my voyage and the death of Levontiew, after which I declared that it appeared necessary, in my opinion, that we should summon all those who were absent, in order that we might be ready to defend ourselves, or to make an attack in case of necessity.

Mr. Meder

Mr. Meder informed the committee that he had prepared one hundred cartouch boxes, each containing forty-eight full cartridges, and sixty other charges fastened to each; and that Mr. Crustiew had collected, or caused to be made, sixty knives, which might be used to advantage instead of cutlasses, as each of them was eighteen inches long and three broad: that sixteen pair of pistols and thirty-six hatchets had been purchased; and that Mr. Panow had caused one hundred pikes to be made.

The number of our company amounted to fifty-nine persons, every one of whom appeared fully determined to support each other. I therefore assured my companions that when we had united our forces we should be able to resist every open attack, provided we were all together. For this reason I ordered Mr. Panow to send an immediate express to those that were absent. The approach of spring permitted our coming together without exciting any suspicion; because the governor and all the inhabitants of Kamchatka were persuaded that our attention was taken up in preparations for our establishment on the extremity of the peninsula.

In order to give more strength to this general opinion, I proposed to the society that we should draw up a memorial, and present it to the governor, in which we should pray him to grant us a ship to transport all our provisions and effects.

The meeting was on the point of breaking up, when Mr. Panow made a motion. He began by observing that the indiscretion of one single person would be sufficient to destroy all our hopes; for which reason he held it to be of the last necessity to resolve in this committee that the association should give up all authority into my hands, in order that, after having given so many proofs of my attachment

ment to their interests, I might in future be dispensed from communicating my intentions respecting the measures I proposed to take, and the means which I intended to employ in carrying my plan into execution. He therefore proposed that the whole society should agree to submit implicitly to my orders, and to ratify this submission by an oath. He observed, that when the society had thus granted me the supreme authority, it would depend upon myself to nominate my council and the chiefs who might be proposed to the parties I should hereafter form.

Mr. Stephanow opposed this motion; but it was agreed to by the society, so that Mr. Stephanow remained alone. In order to dissipate his confusion, I declared that I would nominate him a member of my council, because, as he was the only one who mistrusted my intentions, he might superintend my actions. The meeting, however, opposed his nomination, at the instance of Mr. Panow, who declared that Stephanow had rendered himself incapable of any confidence on our part, and that it was merely with a view of excluding him from our secrets that he had made his proposition. For he could not, as he observed, conceal that he was in possession of indications of treachery meditated on the part of Mr. Stephanow, though he had never chosen to search to the bottom of his intrigues, because he was desirous of sparing the life and honour of his relation. But he threatened, that if Mr. Stephanow did not consent to receive and submit to the future orders, till the day of our departure, he should hold himself obliged to employ every means in his power to come at the knowledge of his proceedings, and to expose him to the company.

I was extremely astonished to hear Mr. Panow express himself in this manner, in the presence of Mr. Stephanow, who did not answer a single word.

The

The company, equally surprized, requested me to force Mr. Panow to declare what he knew; but I refused, by observing, that I respected the sentiments of Mr. Panow, and placed the most unbounded confidence in his declaration. Nevertheless I asked Mr. Stephanow, whether he would receive and obey the orders; to which he answered in the affirmative, at the same time that he loaded me with invectives, and declared that I was indebted to Mr. Panow for the preservation of my life. He called his relation to witness, that he had no wish to betray the interests of the society; and that his vengeance had no other object in view than myself personally; a loss which, he said, was of little consequence, as he was well assured that many of the company were more capable of executing the appointment of chief than myself. He even took upon him to declare, that I had abused my authority in putting Levontiew to death, in which affair his cousin had been deceived; though the truth was, that I was desirous of usurping his fortune after his death. This confident assertion excited the indignation of Mr. Kuzneczow, who presented the letter of the deceased to the society. The hand-writing was immediately known, and the contents justified my resolution. This circumstance, however, produced no change in the ideas of Stephanow, who demanded the judgment of God between him and myself. This judgment is founded on a custom of the Cossacks, which establishes that the two opponents shall fight a duel, in presence of witnesses, and the person overcome is esteemed guilty.

His ridiculous appeal produced a division in the meeting. The most rational part were of opinion that it was necessary to interpose their authority, and condemn Stephanow; but the rest hesitated. Upon this division I thought it proper to answer for

for myself, being assured that it was of the greatest consequence that I should give proofs of resolution. I therefore replied that I accepted his challenge, and appointed ten o'clock the following day to give him satisfaction, at the distance of two leagues from our habitation.

The associates agreed to accompany us, under pretence of hunting. This incident occasioned the final termination of Mr. Panow's proposition to be retarded. He thought proper, nevertheless, to keep Mr. Stephanow in sight, and to endeavour to pacify him; but finding it impossible to produce any alteration in his disposition, as he himself told me, he abandoned him to his unhappy fate.

On the 2d in the morning I ordered my sledge to be harnessed, and departed with Messrs. Crustiew and Kuznieczen for the rendezvous. Mr. Panow attended his relation, and at nine o'clock the whole company were met, and determined that the quarrel should be decided with the broad sword. As soon as we had received our arms he advanced towards me with unexampled temerity. I parried the first stroke he made, by engaging his sword, which broke in two; at which instant I stepped back to let him see that I was not disposed to take advantage of his being disarmed. The wretch then drew out a pistol, and fired it at me, without any other effect except that the ball grazed my left arm. His treachery irritated me to such a degree that I advanced towards him, though I saw a second pistol in his hand, which, however, missed fire. I then seized him and threw him on the ground. The associates immediately came up, and urged me to put him to death. This, however, I refused. I put him into their hands, requesting that they would spare the life of this wretched person; but my request did not prevent their insulting and ill treating him on all sides,

Mr. Panow

Mr. Panow took charge of him, and we returned to our habitations, where I appointed a meeting of the committee at six in the evening; and in the mean time I visited the governor, with whom I dined. Our discourse ran upon the projects of Mr. Hettman. I omitted nothing to confirm the governor in the hope of possessing the government of Ochoczk. After dinner Madame Nilow called me aside, and informed me that her daughter pressed her respecting the conclusion of our marriage, and consequently that it depended on me to persuade her to wait the moment fixed for our union; but that if I consented she would undertake to dispose her husband to agree to the celebration of our union.

Being thus obliged to gain time, I had no other means of excuse than to urge my intention of first making an excursion to fix my new colony, and to build a house, and arrange my household affairs, that her daughter might not be exposed to the rigour of the season, without every necessary convenience. After a long conversation this good mother adopted my reasons, and pleaded my cause with her daughter, to whom she introduced me; but as she soon after left us, the whole charge fell upon me, and it was with difficulty that I prevailed on this amiable young lady to consent to the delay.

C H A P. XVII.

Various proceedings in the association for projecting the escape of the exiles from slavery.

AT six in the evening, I repaired to our meeting, where Mr. Crustiew presided in my absence. He addressed me in the name of the whole company, which granted me the entire authority and most absolute command over the society. I accepted their submission, which was confirmed by mutual oath. After this ceremony, I required Mr. Panow to declare the motives which had determined Mr. Stephanow to attempt my life; he at first begged me not to press him in this respect, as he observed that he had given his word and oath to the unfortunate Stephanow, though he would not conceal that, in a long conversation with him since his last accident, he had obtained his permission to discover the causes that had produced his enmity towards me.

My friends all declared unanimously that it was necessary the wretch should himself appear, whereupon Kuzneczow immediately went out to fetch him. This unhappy man appeared before us, not only without the least confusion, but with a degree of audacity by which he appeared to dare me. I made a sign to Mr. Crustiew, who questioned him concerning the disposition of his mind, and the causes which had produced his extreme malice against me. His answer was to the following effect.

“ Ever since I first knew your chief, I found it
“ impossible to forgive that superiority which he
“ has assumed over us all. My jealousy was often
“ outrageous, but the confidence he reposed in me
“ usually

“ usually restored my recollection, and I have often
 “ applauded my own resolution in overcoming my
 “ natural disposition, which led me to offend. I
 “ had even persuaded myself that I possessed the
 “ most unshaken attachment to him, when I was
 “ surprized by jealousy. I beheld the lovely daughter
 “ of the governor, I became enamoured of her,
 “ and the certain knowledge of her approaching
 “ marriage with your chief, caused me to swear his
 “ destruction. You know the rest, gentlemen,
 “ and I here protest, that though his generosity has
 “ preserved my life, it has made no change in my
 “ intentions. If, therefore, it be of any consequence
 “ to you to preserve his life, do not spare
 “ mine.”

Several members of the society represented his folly and baseness to him, but his answers only shewed that his mind was in a state of desperation. His situation, nevertheless, affected me, and I addressed myself to him in a mild and friendly manner, assuring him that I harboured no resentment against him, though he had just reasons to blame himself for the little confidence he reposed in me, before he made a determination to engage in so base an attempt against my safety. I acquainted him that it was very true I had an esteem for the governor's daughter, and had reasons to think myself the object of her affection; but that I did not intend to marry her, and consequently his despair was premature. I then called the whole company to witness the truth of my assertions; whereupon the unhappy Stephanow fell at my feet, begged a thousand pardons, and entreated me to forget all that had passed. I promised the most absolute compliance with this request, on condition that he would inviolably submit to the orders of the society; and with a view to make sure of him, I nominated three associates to attend him and watch his motions.

After

After I had thus received the satisfaction of recalling this man to his senses, I adjourned the committee till nine o'clock.

On the 3d, Mr. Panow waited upon me in the morning, to thank me for the goodness I had shewn to his unhappy friend, at the same time that, in his name, he requested permission to see me. I consented, the more willingly, as I could depend upon the rectitude of Mr. Panow. Stephanow arrived about ten o'clock, and entreated me to confirm the promise that I did not intend to marry the governor's daughter, which I did with the utmost earnestness; upon which he begged, that at the instant of my departure I would permit him to carry her off. Compassion for the man's unhappy situation, as well as the necessity of saving myself from the excess of his despair, induced me to promise, after advising him to be patient, that I would use every means to satisfy his wishes, as far as their accomplishment might agree with the inclinations of the young lady. This promise contented the poor man, who then returned to his confinement. Mr. Panow, after his departure, embraced me cordially, with many thanks for the pains I took to restore the peace of mind of his relation. The rest of the day was employed in composing the order of service for my companions, that every one might perform his task with propriety. In the evening the hettman came with several merchants to lose some games at chess, which happened to his wish, and produced no small profit; for his winnings did not amount to less than two thousand five hundred roubles that night.

On the 4th, I received a letter from Nisney Ostrogg, from one of the associates, named Loginow, who advised that three exiles from Verchney Ostrogg had resolved to wait upon me, in order to be admitted into our society, though he was assured

assured that their design was to regain their liberty by betraying me. He expressed his suspicions that these three exiles had been informed of our design by the late Levontiew, and concluded his letter by informing me that himself and Sibaew had resolved to return very soon, with all the other associates.

On the 5th, I convened a meeting to draw up a petition to the governor, requesting a vessel for the carriage of our utensils and effects to Lopattka, in order that we might form our establishment. After this business was dispatched, I informed them of the approaching arrival of our companions from Nisney Oistrogg, and the project of the three exiles of Verchney. With regard to the last affair, we resolved that we would confess to them that it was very true we had formed a design to escape from the tyranny under which we had suffered, but that since the governor had extended his protection to us, we had determined to form a new colony at Lopattka, and consequently we should propose to them to associate in our undertaking. I requested all the members of our society to converse with them agreeable to this arrangement.

Towards evening, a certain merchant, named Krasnikow, arrived, and proposed to me to enter into a contract with him for the sole furnishing of our colony with supplies; on which account he promised to give credit for twelve thousand roubles. I replied, that this affair being a common concern to all the individuals who composed this new colony, I could not, for that reason, make any stipulation with him until I had first received their instructions, though I did not doubt their consent, on account of the great advantages the society would derive from such a credit. This poor merchant already devoured in imagination the great advantages which such an exclusion must produce. In hopes therefore

therefore, of purchasing my good will, he drew a purse of two hundred roubles out of his pocket, which he pressed me to accept, and which I did not think proper to refuse, as it served the better to cover my intentions and confirm the public in the persuasion that a new colony was really about to be formed. With this view I likewise begged him to procure me some good carpenters and blacksmiths.

On the 6th, I was invited to spend the day with the hettman, who put a confused mass of papers into my hands, containing his projects relative to the Aleuthes islands; from which he begged me to compose a memorial to be presented to her Imperial Majesty. The head of this man was filled with such a numerous arrangement of chimerical projects, that it was with the utmost difficulty I could dissuade him from the grossest absurdities in the foundation of his system; and perhaps I should not have succeeded, if the chancellor, who arrived during our conference, had not supported my reasoning.

In the evening the governor's family arrived, who, at my request, invited some of my companions, among whom was Mr. Stephanow. I had before found an opportunity to persuade Miss Aphanasia to dissemble her sentiments towards him, which she promised to do, and I could depend on her promise. In this manner we passed the evening very agreeably, and I had sufficient leisure to make my reflections on the weakness of the human mind, when I saw that the same Stephanow, who, a short time before had used every effort for my destruction, was now continually loading me with the titles of his guardian angel and benefactor.

Upon our departure I accompanied the governor's lady home, at her own request, where I learned the discourse which had passed between Mr. Stephanow and Miss Aphanasia. The amount was that Ste-

phanow had declared his love in due form, and entreated her to accept him for a husband. To this the lady answered, that as she had not yet had a sufficient opportunity to become acquainted with him, she could not accede to his proposal; but that she hoped time would tend to advance his expectations. She assured him that she had no aversion to his countenance, but that the accomplishment of his hopes would, it was to be feared, find great obstacles on the part of her parents, who expected a fortune to secure her future welfare; and, as Mr. Stephanow, being an exile, could have no possessions, the adjustment of that business would doubtless be very difficult. She further acquainted him that this greatest obstacle could only be removed by my protection, for which purpose she recommended him to employ every means of cultivating my friendship. I thanked this amiable young lady for her goodness, while at the same time I felt the sincerest regret to behold myself the instrument of her future affliction, though her kindness and friendship banished, for the moment, these afflicting thoughts from my mind.

C H A P. XVIII.

The exiles in danger of treachery. They endeavour to procure a vessel, but without success. Their military arrangement. Final project.

ON my return home Mr. Crustiew informed me of the arrival of Messrs. Ivaskin, Voladimir, and Puskaraw, the three exiles concerning whom I had received information from Verchney. On the 7th, in the morning, I received a visit from Mr. Stephanow, who fatigued me by his meanness. At ten o'clock Mr. Ivaskin came to see me, together with his two companions. Their first conversation turned upon their sufferings and their birth, which they finished by compliments, and the observation that they had lived long enough in the world to be ready to submit to the commands of so enlightened a chief as myself, at the same time that they declared the intention for which they had come so far; namely, to be in readiness to sacrifice their lives to promote my interest. I thanked them for their compliment, but declared, that as I was equally wretched with themselves, it was out my power to serve them in any other way than by mitigating, in some measure, the hardships of their situation, for which purpose, in case they chose to associate with us to form our new colony, I would readily share with them the advantages which our labour and industry might procure. This reply had a very striking effect upon their countenances. Mr. Ivaskin replied, that they had formed very different hopes, as they had heard from some of their intimate friends that I had resolved to pursue a plan to set the exiles at liberty; the hope of

co-operating in which had been the sole motive of their application to me. Upon this declaration I assured them, that it was true that the unhappy state of slavery in which I found myself, as well as the sufferings of such a number of brave men, had led me at first, to the determination of running all risks to procure our liberty, but that since government had granted us such distinguished marks of protection, and had given us the means of procuring an easy and comfortable situation, I had changed my resolution, and had persuaded all my companions to relinquish theirs; in consequence of which they had resolved to assist in my labours. I continued to display to them, at full length, the advantages that might be expected to result from our enterprize; and I gave so flattering an account of the hopes I had conceived of its success, that they were entirely convinced of its reality.

Several of our companions entered soon after, and the conversation turned entirely upon the means I had adopted to render our establishment successful. I took this opportunity of asking Mr. Ivaskin for his determination, who replied, that the thing required mature examination, and could not be decided in an instant; but Messrs. Puskarew and Voladimir declared that they would unite themselves to us without reserve, and at the same time proceeded to say, in the presence of Mr. Ivaskin, that as for him, they were determined to have no further connection with one who had formed the villainous project of obtaining his pardon by betraying a number of brave men. They declared that they had undertaken the journey with him, expressly with the intention of frustrating his design, in case our views had been to escape from Kamchatka, and proceeded to relate the whole of Ivaskin's project, who finding himself discovered, began to intreat for pardon. I said no more to him in reply, than that the idea alone of so vile an undertaking

taking convinced me that he could not escape disgrace and punishment, though, with respect to myself, as my conduct had been such as to fear no reproaches, I would consent to pardon him, on condition that he never again appeared in my sight.

After his departure, as I did not think it prudent to expose myself to the enterprizes of so base a wretch, I immediately waited on the chancellor, and acquainted him with Ivaskin's attempt. This account enraged the chancellor to such a degree, that he immediately went to the governor, and obtained an order to dispatch Ivaskin to Verchney, with an injunction never to return again to Bolscha. Thus ended the attempt of this insidious wretch. My companions congratulated me on its happy issue; but I required them to discover none of our views or intentions to our new associates, because I was desirous first of gaining a knowledge of their real intentions before we should communicate any particulars of information to them.

On the 8th, I convened the chiefs of our society, and went in a body with them to the chancery to present our petition, which the governor caused to be read. The decision of the council was, that, as government could not furnish us with a vessel, we should be supplied by baydars, which are large boats. In consequence of which resolution, a sufficient number of these boats were ordered to be delivered to us, which, by making several trips along the shore, might render us services equally essential with those of a larger vessel. To prevent delay the governor ordered them to be immediately delivered, and at the same time he caused the concession of the land of Lopattka to be given into my hands, together with the permission to begin my operations as soon as I thought proper.

This resolution, so unfavourable to our interests, destroyed our hope of possessing a vessel in our own power.

power. I therefore assembled a committee, in which, after a considerable discussion, it was determined, that we should postpone our departure, under various pretences, till we could seize a proper opportunity of gaining possession of an armed vessel by main force, and by that means making our escape. And, in order that the execution of this project might not be left entirely to accidental events, we appointed the 12th for a secret committee, the members of which were immediately nominated, and were as follow: Myself, President; Mr. Crustiew, Mr. Kuzneczow, Mr. Baturin, Mr. Panow, Mr. Gourcfinin, and Mr. Wynbladth.

On the 12th Sibaew, and Loginow arrived from Nisney Ostrogg with twelve other associates. I dined this day with the governor, and after dinner Madame Nilow acquainted me that she designed to cause a complete house to be constructed in wood, that it might be carried to the spot where I might establish the principal place of my new colony. She assured me, that I need not give myself any uneasiness concerning the arrangement of my household affairs, as she was determined to take charge of the whole; for she declared her intention, that my marriage with her daughter should be celebrated in the month of May at farthest. This delay removed the apprehensions I had began to entertain. I thanked her with all my heart for the care she had the goodness to take of my future establishment, and passed the rest of the day in the company of this worthy family. It was very late before I returned home, where I found a letter from Mr. Norin, commanding officer at Nisney, which was brought by Sibaew. This officer had forwarded to me a quantity of furs, in payment for the sum I had lent him. He felicitated me on my possession of the favour of the governor, and my approaching marriage, and concluded his letter by requesting my protection.

On

On the 10th, I conferred with the different persons appointed to form the committee of the 12th, and the rest of the day was employed in attending to our arms and ammunition.

On the 11th, the private meeting was held by adjournment, to appoint the order of service, in case we should be obliged to act by main force. It was settled as follows in three divisions.

The left wing, commanded by Mr. Wynbladth.

Mr. Kuzneczow,
Stephanow,
Sibaew,
Bielsky,
Lopcow,

With thirteen associates.

The center, Myself chief.

Mr. Panow,
Ruimin,
Meder,
Srebernicow,
Loginow,
Baturin,

With fourteen associates.

The right wing, commanded by Mr. Crustiew.

Archidiacre Protopop,
The Prince Zadzkoy,
Brandorp,
Novozilow,
Lapkin,
Volkow,

With twelve associates.

With regard to Messrs. Puskaraw and Voladimir, as well as Ismaelow and Bayarew, who had been before proposed by Mr. Stephanow, we determined to communicate no part of our intentions to them 'till
after

after the expedition. On the same day it was determined, that all the arms should be carried into our hall of meeting, where they should be kept charged, and in order to conceal them from view, an alcove should be erected for that purpose.

On the 12th, at eight in the morning, the committee met, wherein I proposed to consult respecting an expedient to procure a suitable vessel, in which we might effect our escape as soon as the port should be open by the thawing of the ice. Mr. Wynbladth proposed to embrace the opportunity, when a vessel should be on the point of sailing, as the captain usually gives an entertainment the evening before, at which a part of our society might introduce themselves with a quantity of poisoned liquors, which might be administered before the close of the night, so that about midnight it would be easy to get possession of the vessel, after which, on a signal being given, the whole association might go on board, and force the crew to set sail without the least opposition. His advice was rejected.

Mr. Gourcfinin was of opinion, that we might make our escape with our boats, in which we might pass from one of the Kurelles islands to another, and thence to Japan, where we might meet with Dutch vessels, and gain a passage to Europe. His advice was not approved of. The difficulty of navigating these boats in the open sea was attended with evident danger of separation; besides which, in order to arrive at the establishment of the Dutch at Nangafaky, it would be necessary to sail round Japan, which was impracticable.

Mr. Panow declared that he would not presume to make any proposal on account of his ignorance in sea affairs, but referred intirely to me for information.

Mr. Baturin proposed to give the governor an entertainment on the pretended occasion of our approaching

proaching departure to Lopattka, to which we might invite all the principals of the town; and that in the middle of the night, we should seize and keep them as hostages until government consented to deliver a vessel to us. This proposition was likewise rejected, because complicated in the execution; for as the garrison amounted to two hundred and forty soldiers, a number greatly superior to ours, it would always be in their power to force us to set the persons at liberty, whom we might have seized; besides which, as there were near seven hundred Cossacks in the town, it was not probable that so considerable a number of armed men would not interest themselves in a quarrel of this nature. Lastly, a difficulty equally insurmountable arose from the officers of the marine in the port, who might collect their sailors belonging to nine or eleven vessels then in the harbour, and render our escape impossible.

Messrs. Kuzneczow and Crustiew pressed for my opinion, which I stated by representing to the committee the inconveniencies annexed to the execution of the projects before proposed. I convinced them that every attempt by main force would be impracticable, and therefore not to be made, unless called for by the pressing situation of events. I avowed my readiness to sacrifice my life; but at the same time expressed my opinion that our affairs were not so desperate as that we should leave every thing to chance. I informed them that my wish was to take advantage of the departure of the packet St. Peter and St. Paul, which would be ready on the 15th of May, and was manned by only twenty-two sailors with five or six passengers. It was therefore my desire, that ten or twelve of our associates should engage as sailors on board this vessel, and that Mr. Kuzneczow, being a merchant, might agree with the captain for his passage, by which means it would be easy to engage the captain by promises and money

ney to receive several bales of furs secretly in the night, on pretence of evading the duties. This arrangement would require the captain to sail out of the harbour in the evening, when it would be easy for us to board the vessel by the assistance of our boats, in which case we should find ourselves masters of the vessel without any effusion of blood, as our number would exceed that of the crew four to one; after which we might send back the sailors and officers in our boats, and continue our voyage.

The end of our debate was, that my proposition was unanimously approved, and the committee charged Mr. Kuzneczow to select twelve associates, and procure them to be entered on board that vessel. In the evening the whole society assembled, and received the agreeable news that the measures for carrying our enterprize into execution were absolutely settled; without endangering the life or safety of any one. This declaration set every mind at ease. After which I acquainted the society that I thought it necessary to make a journey to Lopattka, in order to fix the public opinion respecting the establishment of our colony. The meeting approved my proposition, whereupon I nominated Messrs. Stephanow, Panow, Wynbladth, and six others, to accompany me.

On the 13th, I acquainted the governor, and also the chancellor and the hettman, with my intentions. The governor gave directions for supplying me with an order, that all the tajons, or chiefs of the villages of Kamchatka, should afford me the same assistance as would have been given to himself. Madame Nilow promised me provisions for the journey. The rest of the day was employed in preparing our sledges and refreshing the dogs.

C H A P. XIX.

A journey to Lopattka.—Siberian sorcery.—Return to Bolsba.

ON the 14th, at seven in the morning, I departed with four sledges; we stopped at the governor's house to breakfast and take our leave. The governor's son and Miss Aphanasia accompanied us as far as Nichilova, where we dined with the tajon, and afterwards parted. I continued my route as far as Tsekawka, where we slept at the house of the tajon. Here we found a schaman, who called himself a forcerer, and who according to the opinion of the natives had dealings with the devil. I was desirous of being a witness of the manners of these impostors, and therefore pressed the tajon to bring the schaman to me, that he might tell my fortune: the tajon accordingly used his endeavours to persuade him to gratify my expectations; and a present of six roubles secured his compliance. Here follows an account of the manner in which the forcerers of Kamchatka exhibit their artifices:

He first caused all the women to go out of the yourth, after which he stripped himself entirely naked, and washed his whole body with his own urine. He then clothed himself in a long garment made of dogs skins, tanned; upon his head he placed a capuchin with two horns, and lastly he fastened a drum to his belt. Thus equipped he placed himself in the center of the yourth, turned round once, cried out, *kutri, kuttui, kutuchia*, and drew a bottle out of his budget, part of the contents of which he drank. He then threw himself on the ground, where he remained motionless for ten or fifteen minutes. At the expiration of this time he began

began to howl and cry, and soon after got up and beat the drum with all his might, and without any intermission, except at intervals to give more efficacy to his howlings. His motions were so violent that he screamed out with all his force, and at last his mouth, eyes, and all his limbs, became convulsed in a manner truly shocking to behold. When an hour had thus passed, during which he made every imaginable contortion, the schaman sat down on the ground, and began his prophecy with a hoarse and feeble voice. The following is what he said, word for word: "Thou art come to demand thy fate of my spirit; he will second thy efforts to avenge the death of the spirits of our fathers, whom the Russians have cut off. It is Kutuchta who is with thee. Thou shalt behold the blood of thine enemies, thou shalt be happy in thy voyage; but afterwards, when thou shalt spill blood and thine own shall flow, thou shalt be dear to the spirits of our fathers." After these words he fell asleep, and the tajon caused him to be carried into a separate yourth.

Upon my enquiry respecting the liquor this pretended forcerer had drank, the tajon informed me that it was an infusion of muchomor, a kind of champignon, which has the power of intoxicating. He assured me that its force was such, that the schaman sometimes slept three or four days after it; whence I concluded that the muchomor produced effects similar to those of opium. As soon as this curious, though by no means agreeable, entertainment was over, I went to bed and slept comfortably.

On the 15th, we arrived at Kurinka, a village composed of eight yourths, where we staid till a storm was over, which every instant threatened to bury us beneath the snow.

On the 16th, we arrived at Compak, a village situated at the foot of the mountain Opala. The tajon
of

of this place presented me with several pieces of copper ore, and some pieces of lapis lazuli.

On the 17th, I slept at Ozernaia, a village situated on the banks of a river of the same name, which flows into the lake Kurille.

On the 18th, we arrived at Tontina, a village of the Kurilles; the tajon received us cordially, and promised to accompany us in examining the whole country of Lopattka; but as we arrived very late and were greatly fatigued, we deferred the business to a future day.

On the 19th, the tajon presented his family to us, and made us an offer of his vessels to double the cape; for he assured us that the eastern part of Lopattka was more fertile than that which he inhabited; but as I had determined to conduct myself in such a manner as to convince government that I really designed to establish a colony, I proposed to travel inland towards the lake Kuil, and therefore requested the tajon to provide me with a guide. He offered his own services, and that of his sons; we therefore departed at nine in the morning, and arrived very late in the evening on the banks of the lake, after which we travelled to the eastward along its banks, and arrived at an habitation of the Kuilles, where we passed the night.

On the 20th, we directed our course toward the head of a small river which falls into the lake, and is nearly in the midway between cape Lopattka, and the lake itself. Here we had the good fortune to find a very agreeable plain; but as it was still covered with snow, I could not form any judgment respecting the soil. For this reason I contented myself with erecting several piquets, to denote the situation of the future town, and then I drew a plan of the place, with the intention of more effectually securing the good opinion of the governor and other principal inhabitants. From this place we departed directly

directly for Tontina, where we arrived in the evening.

On the morning of the 21st, after a short repose, I requested the tajon to furnish me with two baydars, in which, with a gentle breeze at north-west, I sailed round the cape in a very short time. The island Schoumetskoy being in sight, I determined to land on its north-west side, where I passed the night, because there was no wind, and I did not wish to fatigue the rowers.

On the 22d, I sailed to the island Poromusir; and as the wind began to draw round to the eastward, I determined to pass over to the island Anfigonone, commonly called Alaide. We quitted Poromusir at ten in the morning, and arrived at Alaide at three quarters after three, where we slept upon the snow, having no other bed than our bear's skins.

On the 23d, the beauty of the weather, with the wind in the south-west quarter, tempted me to return to Bolsha by sea; but as I had left my sledges and equipage with the tajon of Tontina, I resolved to send Mr. Panow thither in one of the boats, that he might return with our equipage to Bolsha. After his departure I set sail at eleven in the morning, and sailed north-east a quarter north, with a strong breeze, under which we made great way. About five in the evening we arrived at the entrance of Lopattka, where we got in with much difficulty, as we had the misfortune to run aground on the bar.

On the 24th, at four in the morning, we departed from Lopattka and sailed along shore until we arrived at the port of Bolsha at three in the afternoon, and came to an anchor at Tchekawka, a bay at the entrance of the port; for the river being frozen, we could not proceed further by water. Hence I sent to the tajon for sledges, and after making some presents to the Kurelles of Tontina, I departed

I departed for Bolsherezk, at which place I arrived on the 25th, at three in the morning.

My return surprized Mr. Crustiew, who informed me, that the governor's lady had sent orders to the tajon of Nischilow, to inform her of my arrival, as she had determined to make a party of pleasure to meet me. But the news which gave me the greatest satisfaction was, that every thing was quiet, and no one any longer doubted the reality of our project. I then laid down to rest; but as I intended to surprize the governor, by appearing before him and presenting my plan, I gave orders to awake me at six in the morning, when I got up and sketched out my plan, with the situations of our gardens, which, on the whole, made a very pretty appearance. I finished my work at ten o'clock, and immediately waited upon the governor. The serjeant of the guard knew me at a distance, and carried the news to the governor and his whole family, whom I found on the draw-bridge. I was greatly affected at the manner in which they received me. The governor took me with him into his closet, and heard the account of my excursion; but upon the sight of my plan it was impossible to conceal his joy. He observed that the enterprize was really one of the most happy thoughts in the world, and said he had not the least doubt but her Imperial Majesty would give marks of her satisfaction on receiving the plan, together with his representation of the collateral circumstances. Full of this project, he sent for the chancellor and the hettman, to communicate his ideas to them; while in the mean time he sent me to give an account of my absence to his dear Aphanasia. This beautiful and lovely young lady received me with those transports which the candour and openness of her disposition did not permit her to conceal, and her respectable mother bore a share in her joy.

I was

I was detained to dinner, and, during my stay, had no leisure to reflect on the agitation of my mind. The different questions of the governor, the chancellor and the hettman, which required proper answers, afforded sufficient employment for my whole attention. But as soon as dinner was over I retired, on pretence of taking some repose, but was very far from being capable. For, on my return home, I could no longer support the anxiety which possessed my mind, and forced me to attend to an infinity of reflections that presented themselves. Every day brought the moment of the execution of my enterprize nearer. Gratitude, and the attachment I had formed to the governor's family, seemed to reproach me; for I clearly saw that my departure would be attended with the ruin of him, and all his family, because the court would attribute to him alone the crime of granting me the means of making my escape. These reflections were still further aggravated by the consideration that our enterprize, though well planned, might fail, and, in that case, no other expedient would remain than to attack and gain possession of the fort by surprise; an expedient which could not be carried into execution without risking the blood of those who had so greatly interested themselves in my welfare. It was evident that the governor, who had given me his confidence, and had honoured me with his friendship, was intitled to my most grateful returns; but, on the other hand, as the chief of a party, I should become perjured, and unworthy to live, if I should endanger or abandon the interests of the society.

Such were my reflections, which I communicated to Mr. Crustiew, a man of understanding and a sincere friend. After he had heard me, he embraced me, and assured me that, from the knowledge of my character, he had always been apprehensive of this crisis; that he was infinitely obliged

to

to me for the confidence I had placed in him, and would speak his sentiments with freedom. He admitted, that the court would impute my escape to the governor, if information should be given respecting the advantages he had afforded me; but that the chancellor and the hettman, being likewise concerned, there could be no doubt but they would draw up their report in such a manner that the court should know nothing of what the governor had done in my favour. For this reason, he observed, that I might dismiss my apprehensions; more especially as my obligations to the governor could not be put in competition with my duty to the society. Such, he said, was his opinion with respect to our future escape; but in case we should be obliged to act by open force, one or the other event must happen, either that we should all be put to the sword, or should become masters of the country. In which last case, it would be in my power to carry the governor with me by force, who, no doubt, would embrace this determination with pleasure, with a view of escaping from punishment; and that, on our arrival in Europe, I should find means to shew my gratitude to him and his whole family.

These reasons, weak as they were, served to quiet my mind, and I perceived, that when the mind easily gives way to despair, it is as easily comforted. They who may read the present passage ought to beware of deciding either on my weakness or my fortitude. When Mr. Crusti  w observed that my anxiety was removed, he proposed to assemble a committee, which I appointed to be held at eleven that evening.

C H A P. XX.

A dangerous disturbance among the Exiles. Its consequence.

THE principal associates met, and Mr. Kuznezow informed me, that he had succeeded in placing ten hunters and two natives of Kamchatka, on whom he could rely, among the crew of the packet St. Peter and St. Paul, and that he had likewise agreed with the captain for his passage to Ochotsk, as well as respecting the embarking and private conveyance of his merchandizes. This account of the advanced state of our affairs gave me the greatest satisfaction.

On the 26th, in the morning, I received an invitation for myself and friends from Madame Nilow, to attend her on an excursion in our sledges. We therefore waited on the governor, and set out with him and his family, accompanied by the chancellor and the hettman. At the distance of two leagues from the banks of the Bolsha, near its entrance, we stopped and examined some houses, newly and very neatly built in wood. After this inspection, the governess informed me, that they were designed for me and her daughter, observing, at the same time, that she thought it became her, as a mother, to give us houses and furniture, as her husband had given us land. The governor, who was till this instant unacquainted with his lady's undertaking, highly approved it, and ordered the chancellor to direct workmen to finish the building. Mr. Stephanow, who was present, and heard all that passed, could not avoid observing to Mr. Crustiew, that he saw very clearly that I deceived him, and should deceive the whole society, after which words he went off with

with his sledge. Mr. Cruftiew concealed this discourse from me, and only said, that he was obliged to go; immediately after which, he left us: so that I remained alone with Mr. Baturin, with whom I waited upon the governor home, and dined with his family.

After dinner, Mr. Sibeaw requested to speak with me, and informed me that it was absolutely necessary I should go home, as Mr. Stephanow had produced a dangerous riot. I sent him back with the assurance that I would come without delay; but as it was necessary that I should give some reason to the governor for my hasty departure, I told him in public, that I was informed Mr. Stephanow had again fallen into a state of phrenzy, which required my assistance. Miss Aphanasia said openly, that she knew his disorder, and was convinced it was not at all dangerous. It was to no purpose that I made signs to her to desist, as she took no notice, but directing herself to me: You are going, said she, to interest yourself in favour of an unhappy wretch, who wishes to deprive you of life; upon which she burst into tears. These words excited the governor's curiosity, who demanded an explanation; whereupon I gave him an undisguised account of my adventure and combat with Stephanow, not omitting to observe, that his enmity arose from his passion for Miss Aphanasia. Upon this information, the governor desired me to let him send him to prison, where he would contrive to render him a little wiser. I insisted, however, upon its being left in my power to imprison him at home, and, at the same time, represented the necessity of this act of authority for maintaining subordination among those who were destined to form the new colony. He therefore determined to grant me this right, and the chancellor added, that it was very proper that I should be permitted to

exert my authority. Seeing the governor in this disposition, I requested the concession of this power in writing, and accordingly the chancellor drew up an instrument, which the governor immediately signed.

These transactions prevented me from returning home as soon as I should otherwise have done. Upon my arrival, I found more than fifty soldiers or cossacks round our habitations, disputing with my companions. I was immediately informed that Mr. Stephanow, after a dispute with Mr. Crustiew, had called a soldier, who was in fight, and told him to run for assistance, for that otherwise I should put him to death, and that he had secrets to reveal to the chancery. The soldier had collected others, and several cossacks came to the assistance of Stephanow, who was already shut up by our companions. The soldiers insisted that he should be set at liberty, and at last attempted to force their way into our habitations, so that our companions were obliged to take arms to check their impetuosity. Upon this I enquired if any of the soldiers could read writing, and a corporal answered in the affirmative. I made this man read the concession of right, signed by the governor and the chancellor; after which he begged my pardon, and intreated that I would not inform the governor of what had passed. I promised him I would not, and thus the disturbance ended.

As soon as I came within doors, Mr. Crustiew informed me that he had luckily followed Mr. Stephanow, from a conviction that he was going to create some disturbance; but that as he did not overtake him till his arrival at his house, he took Messrs. Kuzneczow and Gourcsinin to accompany him. They all three entered Mr. Stephanow's house, whom they found busy writing. At sight of them he flew out into exclamations and threatenings too dangerous to be heard by strangers, and
ended

ended by declaring to them, that he would immediately go and discover the whole plot.

These circumstances evidently shewed how much this madman was to be feared. They attempted to seize him, but he proved strong enough to overthrow Mr. Crustiew and Mr. Gourcsnin, and, in spite of the efforts of Mr. Baturin, who held him fast, he had got out of the door, and excited the soldiers to assemble, in order to deliver him; for he told them, that the other exiles intended to poison him, and that he had secrets of treason to declare at the chancery. Mr. Crustiew proceeded to observe, that while the soldier ran to the town, they bound and gagged Stephanow, whom they shut up under guard; but a multitude being afterwards got together, and demanding the liberty of Stephanow, they saw themselves necessitated to take arms, while Sibeaw stood over the prisoner, with orders to put him to death, at the first report of any fire arms.

This relation put me in fear for the life of the unhappy wretch, for which reason I made haste to change the orders of Sibeaw; after which, fearing that the reports might reach the governor, I sent Mr. Crustiew, with instructions to inform him of what had passed, and then I gave orders to assemble the whole society.

We only waited the return of Mr. Crustiew to begin our proceedings, who at last arrived, and brought the good news, that the governor left me entirely master of the prisoner and his punishment; but that with regard to the assembling of the soldiers and cossacks, he would give orders that no person in future should dare to approach our quarters with the intention of committing violence, under pain of fifty strokes of the knout, and condemnation to the public works for three months.

This

This agreeable message was delivered to me by Mr. Crustiew in the full meeting, and as soon as he had taken his seat, I demanded their advice how to act with regard to Stephanow. The greater part were for putting him to death, as a man capable of excesses which, sooner or later, would endanger the society; and insisted that it was better to save the lives of fifty-seven persons by sacrificing one single person, especially one who was a criminal. I could not, however, consent to this resolution, on account of my attachment for Mr. Panow, who was related to the prisoner, and was not then present. I therefore used every persuasion to induce them to defer the execution till his return; but the company appeared very unquiet, and pressed me to pass judgment upon him. I succeeded at last in calming their apprehensions by a stratagem. I proposed that Stephanow should be brought before us, be reproached by the whole company, and that sentence of death should afterwards be passed on him; but instead of arsenic and corrosive sublimate, I would only give him an emetic, the effects of which would lead him to believe his death near at hand. I assured the meeting that I was convinced that this crisis would produce his reformation, and that the instant would decide his fate, and convince him that life or death would depend on his repentance or perseverance in his criminal designs.

My proposal had its effect on the company. I therefore sent four armed associates for the prisoner, and in the mean while the dose of emetic was made up, consisting of three grains. On his arrival he appeared before us with some firmness, but at the sight of the goblet on the table, he turned pale. Before any question was proposed to him the order of the governor was read, and as he knew his hand-writing it was shewn to him, that he might believe the evidence. After this preliminary, I represented

presented to him that his first misconduct indicated nothing more than malevolence against my person, and that therefore he had been pardoned; but the present case being of such a nature as to endanger the whole society, it was not in my power to change the laws of the constitution, and consequently that I must deliver him to their judgment. Mr. Crustiew then displayed all his rhetoric to represent to this unhappy wretch his crimes, and his blindness to his own individual interest. His discourse threw the miserable Stephanow into tears, who confessed himself to be worthy of the greatest punishment. After this, each of the company bestowed some words of detestation on him, and as this ceremony lasted for some time, poor Stephanow fainted, and fell on the ground. By the application of spirit of sal ammoniac and vinegar, he was brought to himself. During the time of his insensibility, Mr. Crustiew drew out the sentence, to which he listened with the greatest anguish, but at the last words, which were "for these causes the said Stephanow is condemned to drink the liquor contained in the bowl, in order that death may ensue," he fainted away a second time. Upon his recovery he asked to speak with me, which being granted, he intreated me to pardon his faults, and to deliver him, if possible, from this fatal judgment, promising that his life and blood should be employed in my service. He then openly declared, that this misfortune was, no doubt, a punishment from the hand of God, whom he had offended by attempting to contract a marriage, though he was already married to a wife then living in Russia. He proceeded to declare, that from that moment he abjured the madness of love, which had led him to the loss of his life in so disgraceful a manner. At length this unhappy man, being urged to drink the liquor, implored the grace and compassion of the company, but in vain,
for

for they persisted in the execution of his judgment. Being thus convinced of the firmness of their resolution, he at last took the cup in his hand, but upon bringing it to his mouth, his courage again failed him, and he fell back into the arms of Sibeaw and Baturin, who held the cup. On his recovery he wept bitterly, and again intreated the company to pardon him. The peculiar state in which I beheld him, moved me to compassion; and as there was reason to fear that the drink, though simply an emetic, might deprive him of life through apprehension, I interposed to obtain his pardon, which was granted, on condition that he should be kept a prisoner until our departure. He consented to this; but, as he was too much exhausted, the company did not press him to sign his submission. He had scarcely strength enough to thank me in a few words for my protection before he fainted again. I caused him to be taken to Mr. Crustiew, where he was bled by Mr. Meder; but this precaution did not preserve him from a violent illness, which seized him and kept him in his bed till the time of our departure. This incident having employed us almost the whole night, the meeting broke up a little before day.

On the 27th, I awoke very late, and was, by that means, prevented from waiting upon the governor in the morning, as I had promised. Miss Aphanasia came to see me, and reproached me for my neglect. She breakfasted with me, and Mr. Crustiew; after which she returned, happy in the information that I had nothing more to fear from Mr. Stephanow.

About noon, Mr. Panow came to me. This worthy associate having been informed of the interest I had taken in the safety of his relation, fell on my neck, and thanked me for my indulgence. He afterwards told me, that he knew that Stephanow had

had meditated the carrying off the governor's daughter, and had, for that purpose, connected himself with Ismailow and Boscarew, with six others, who were determined to quit Kamchatka, but that he had deferred advising me of the plot, because Ismailow and Boscarew had assured him, that they would not take any step without informing him of it. Mr. Panow recommended these two men to me, as likely to be serviceable on board, on account of their knowledge in sea affairs.

After dinner I went to Stephanow with Mr. Panow. This unhappy man related to him his last adventure, in which he did not spare every expression suitable to the enormity of his crime. It was with some satisfaction that I was convinced of the sincerity of his repentance. Mr. Panow did not fail to express a due sense of his conduct, and advised him to shew his gratitude to me in future. We soon retired, as we were not desirous of increasing his confusion; after which we returned to my house where we spent the evening very agreeably.

C H A P. XXI.

*The Count negotiates with the Captain of a vessel.
Preparations for the approaching crisis.*

ON the morning of the 28th, Mr. Kuzneczow requested to speak with me in secret, for which purpose I begged Messrs. Crustiew, Panow, and others, who were present, to retire. He then informed me that Mr. Csurin, commander of the Corvette St. Peter and St. Paul, had acquainted him, that he was unwilling to return to Ochoczk, because of his debts, and for fear of the consequences of a process then against him in the Admiralty court, the issue of which, if it should turn against him, might condemn him to the mines. He would not, therefore, consent to make the voyage but on condition that Mr. Kuzneczow would find security to the amount of three thousand roubles, and would promise to obtain leave of the Admiralty that he might take the command of a merchant vessel. Mr. Kuzneczow observed that this overture had entirely disconcerted his project, as he could not depend on the compliance of another captain, in case Mr. Csurin should give up the command. This account at first alarmed me, but, upon serious reflection on the situation of Mr. Csurin, I perceived some reason to hope that it would forward the project of gaining him over to my interests. I immediately communicated my ideas to Mr. Kuzneczow, who thought them very well founded; but he objected that Csurin was so strongly attached to a girl at Kamchatka, that he never would consent to go without her: I removed this last difficulty, by observing that he might carry the girl
with

with him, to which Mr. Kuzneczow could make no objection.

As it was my wish to become acquainted with the sentiments of Mr. Csurin by personal conversation, I directed Mr. Kuzneczow to bring him to me, and to promise, in general terms, that he would do every thing that might be necessary to render him the services he required. When Mr. Kuzneczow was gone, I rejoined Mr. Crustiew, who was in company with several of our associates. I freely told them what I had heard, and the resolution I had adopted; but I found them strongly persuaded that I should not succeed in the attempt.

After dinner, Mr. Kuzneczow arrived, and informed me of the approaching visit of Mr. Csurin; I therefore went home and had just time to order tea before he came. He made a thousand excuses on his arrival for the liberty he had taken of waiting on me, and requested to know if I had any commissions for Ochoczka, as he, being the commander of the St. Peter and St. Paul, would gladly take charge of them, and I might depend on his diligence.

On this offer I replied, that as it was my intention to import some provisions and other articles for the use of my colony, I would avail myself of his kind offer to put a couple of thousand piastres, into his hands, that he might convert them into such articles of merchandize as I should direct. To this I added, that if it was in my power to render him any services he need only speak, as I knew the gentlemen of the sea were obliged to engage in certain indirect business to enable them to support the charges which were necessary to maintain their situation with credit. I hoped therefore that he would not be offended at the offer of a sum for that purpose.

The open and undesigning manner in which I made this offer, appeared to affect him, and his manner

manner convinced me that I should have no difficulty in settling my business with him. Our discourse was interrupted by the appearance of tea, but we resumed it as soon as the table was cleared. He began by informing me of the subject of the process he had at the Admiralty, the cause of which was as follows.

Captain Lewascheff had commenced a process against Mr. Csurin, for exciting a mutiny among the crew of the ship *St. Ecatherina*, in the expedition of the year 1769. Several sailors deposed that Mr. Csurin was the cause of the oversetting of the boat in the middle of the river *Bolsha*, in which Captain *Kreniczin* then was; and, as the captain was drowned by this accident, the process had been instituted criminally against Csurin. His explanation of the affair afforded ample matter to enable me to convince him that he would certainly be condemned. My reasons appeared to be so well founded, that he declared he would pretend illness, in order to avoid commanding the vessel. This decision reduced me to the necessity of forcing his second retrenchment, which I did, by representing that his delaying his departure would not save him; because, doubtless, when the council saw that he was determined not to return, they would require the governor of *Kamchatka* to send him under guard, so that by this manœuvre, he would gain only a few months delay; after which the confusion of his affairs would be still greater than before. He admitted the truth of this remark, and entreated me to send him to my new colony, or, at least, to favour his procuring a passage to the *Aleuthes* islands, where he would finish the rest of his unfortunate life. As he said these last words he burst into tears, and said, that he could give up his life and fortune without regret, but that his affection for a young person

person with whom he lived, was such, that he could not bear the thoughts of leaving her.

After this confession, he begged me to have pity on his situation, and grant him my protection and advice. I promised to reflect seriously on his affairs, but observed, that it would require some time to consider maturely what was best to be done. I gave him my word, however, that I would clear him of his embarrassment; but at the same time, as a previous condition, I insisted that he should not mention his situation to any one, nor think of quitting the command of the vessel. He swore that he would comply with my directions, and thus we parted. But as I thought it necessary to interest his mind by some immediate advantages, I called him back, to put a bag of five hundred roubles into his hands, with the compliment, that I begged him to accept of this advance to purchase a present for his lady. He refused at first, but I forced him to accept the present by declaring, that, if he persisted in his refusal, I should not believe he was really attached to my interests. He therefore accepted my present, and I was delighted at having made so good a bargain.

On my return to Mr. Crustiew, I informed the society of the good disposition of my client, and they were not a little astonished at the rapidity of my proceedings. In consequence of which, they determined no more to oppose my decisions in future, but wait, with patience and calmness, for the result. I assured them of my readiness to perform my part, and promised to neglect nothing to secure the success of my plan with the most scrupulous attention. I observed, that by this management, steadily adhered to, the moment of execution would be naturally easy, provided we were not forced to precipitate our measures, in consequence of treachery
from

from our own associates, or a discovery on the part of government.

This last reflection induced Mr. Panow to request that I would at least communicate to the society the plan I should adopt, in case we should be discovered or attacked when we least expected it. To this positive question I thought proper to answer, that my resolution would depend on circumstances, and the measures taken by Government; so that it was impossible, at this moment, to fix my determination. But in the mean time I exhorted the society not to be alarmed at the crisis, which might surprize us, but to confirm themselves in the resolution of dying with courage. I likewise added, that to prevent any surprize, I had secured means of receiving positive advice respecting every step which Government might take against me; and that, provided we could have one night before-hand, I would answer for the possession of the fort and garrison; after which I was convinced the town could not hold out, because it stood exposed in every part to the cannon of the fortrefs.

This answer satisfied Mr. Panow; but it gave rise to a longer conference, wherein every one spoke his thoughts, and the whole society unanimously repeated their professions of strict obedience at the critical moment.

I left the company, and proceeded to pass the evening at the governor's house, where I was received like one of the family; and, after passing the evening very agreeably, I returned home about midnight.

On the 29th, I was busied with Mr. Meder, in making three petards, to be used in case circumstances should require the gates of the fortrefs or the chancery to be forced open. During this work I reflected on the business of Mr. Csurin, and digested

gested my plan ; for which reason I sent to desire to see him in the evening. Before dinner I visited Mr. Stephanow, whose fever had increased the preceding day. I found him tolerably easy. He made many apologies for his attempts against my person, and appeared to repent sincerely of what he had done. I therefore endeavoured to raise his spirits, by assuring him, that it would always be in his power to preserve my esteem and friendship, as long as he avoided a repetition of his offences. His reply consisted of reiterated professions of amendment in his future conduct, which confirmed the good opinion I had formed of him.

After dinner I returned home, where I waited the arrival of Mr. Csurin, who came at five o'clock. He began the conversation with promises and assurances of his devotion to my service, and concluded, by requesting to know what I had settled respecting him ; to which I answered,

1. That I required him to retain the command of the packet, and to conform exactly to the arrangement he had made with Mr. Kuzneczow.

2. That at his departure I would let him know what he had to do, but that at present I should only inform him that Mr. Kuzneczow would manage matters so, that the second day after his departure the ship should spring a leak, which would afford a sufficient reason for coming to an anchor, which he might do at Lopattka. In the mean time I promised to obtain the Governor's permission that he might be permitted to establish himself among us. I observed that this appeared to me to be the only honourable method of avoiding the voyage to Ochoczk ; and further, with regard to his establishment and future marriage with the young lady in question, I promised him two thousand roubles, and the place of captain of the military.

My

My proposal pleased him, and he bound himself, by oath, to conform strictly to every particular. He even offered to sign an engagement to that effect, which he confirmed by oath. This affair being finished, I dismissed him, and hastened to call a committee, to communicate the news of my success; and as I thought it very necessary not to lose sight of Mr. Csurin, I charged Mr. Kuzneczow to connect himself with him, and not to leave his company.

C H A P. XXII.

Preparations for departure—Miss Aphanasia discovers the intention of the exiles.

ON the 30th Mr. Crustiew and Mr. Panow, at the head of twenty-five of our associates, were deputed to wait on the governor, with a request that he would please to receive the title of Protector of the new colony. They were likewise charged to wait on the chancellor and the hettman, with a similar request that they would accept other titles relative to the colony; and, in the last place, they were to present a memorial to the magistrates of the town, to request their assistance and support in favour of the new colony, which was to bear the name of Nilovaga, in honour of the governor. They performed their commission, and returned with the news, that they had met with an agreeable reception from all the gentlemen on whom they had been directed to wait.

On the 31st I received a message from the magistrates of the town, informing me that they had favourably received my memorial, and that, in consequence of the utility and services which the capital expected from our industry and attachment, they had sent us an aggregation to the rights of citizens of Bolsharezk for all the children which should be born in the new colony. After I had made the messenger a present, I communicated our good fortune to the company, which was greatly amused at this comedy of my composing.

April the 1st. As I knew that the vessels employed between Ochoczk and Kamchatka usually
 Vol. I. O took

took no larger stock of water than ten or twelve butts, I ordered Mr. Solmanow to purchase twenty or twenty-five butts, and carry them to Csekawka, after getting them put in order, under pretence of applying them to the manufacture of salt from sea water. About ten o'clock this day I received a message from Miss Nilow, that she would call on me in the afternoon, requesting at the same time that I would be alone, because she had affairs of importance to communicate. As I supposed the latter part of this message to be mere pleasantry, I was far from expecting any extraordinary information; and my surprize at the event was much greater, as I had not the least reason to suppose she had made any discovery of my intentions. Miss Nilow arrived at three in the afternoon; her agitation on her first appearance convinced me that she was exceedingly afflicted. At sight of me she paused a moment, and soon after burst into tears, and threw herself into my arms, crying out, that she was unfortunate and forsaken. Her sighs and tears were so extreme that it was more than a quarter of an hour before I could obtain a connected sentence. I was extremely affected at her situation, and used every expedient to calm her mind, but this was extremely difficult, because I was entirely ignorant of the reason of her affliction.

As soon as she became a little composed, she begged me to shut the door, that no one might interrupt us. I came back, and on my knees entreated her to explain the cause of her present situation, which she did to the following effect:

She informed me that her maid discovered to her, that a certain person, named Ivan Kudrin, one of my associates, had proposed to her to share his fortune, and that this indiscreet person had assured the girl, that he was about to quit Kamchatka with me, to make a voyage to Europe, where he hoped to place her in an agreeable situation. The maid had first related

related the circumstance to her mistress, but, as she could never believe me capable of such base and treacherous behaviour to her, she was desirous of hearing the account herself, and had, for that purpose, persuaded the servant to appoint a meeting with Kudrin, in order to question him more amply, while she herself might hear the whole, by being concealed behind a curtain. In this manner, she said, she became convinced of her unhappiness and my treachery, and that she would have spared me the confusion of hearing this, if, from a conviction that she could not live after such an affront, she had not been desirous of bidding me a last farewell.

On finishing these words she fainted; and though I was exceedingly alarmed and distressed on the occasion, yet I did not fail to arrange a plan in my mind, during the interval of her insensibility. When this amiable young lady recovered, she asked if she might give credit to what she had heard. I then threw myself at her feet, and intreated her to hear me calmly, and judge whether I was to blame or not. She promised she would, and I addressed her in the following terms.

“ You may recollect, my dear friend, the account I gave you of my birth, and the rank I held in Europe: I remember the tears you shed on that occasion. The misfortune of being exiled to Kamchatka, would long since have compelled me to deliver myself from tyranny, by death, if your acquaintance and attachment had not preserved me. I have lived for you, and if you could read my heart, I am sure I should have your pity; for the possession of your person is become as necessary to my existence as liberty itself. The liberty I speak of, is not that which your worthy father has given me, but implies the possession of my estate and rank. I have hoped for the possession of your person, with

a view of rendering you happy, in the participation of my fortune and dignity. These views cannot be accomplished at Kamchatka. What rank can I bestow on my love but that of an exile? The favours of your worthy father may be of the shortest duration. His successor may soon recall his ordinances, and plunge me again into that state of suffering and contempt, from which I was delivered for a short moment. Represent to yourself, my dearest friend, the affliction and despair that would overwhelm my soul, when I beheld you a sharer in my pain and disgrace; for you well know, that all the Russians esteem the exiles as dishonoured persons. You have forced me to this declaration of my intentions, in which I have been guided by the attachment and sincerity of my heart. I deferred the communication to you, but I swear that such was my resolution.—Why then interrupted she, did you conceal your intention from me, who am ready to follow you to the farthest limits of the universe?—This assurance encouraged me to proceed, and engage this charming young lady in my interests. I told her, therefore, that I was prevented only by the fear lest she should refuse my proposals, on account of her attachment to her parents; but that, as I now had nothing to fear in that respect, I could inform her, that my intention being to leave Kamchatka, I had determined to carry her off; and in order to convince her, I was ready to call Mr. Crustiew, who would confirm the truth. On this assurance she embraced me, and intreated me to forgive her want of confidence, at the same time that she declared her readiness to accompany me.

This degree of confidential intercourse being established, I persuaded her to dismiss every fear from her mind. Many were the trials I made of her resolution, and the event convinced me, that she was perfectly

perfectly determined to follow my fortunes. The secret being thus secure, by her promise to keep it inviolably, I had no other uneasiness remaining but what arose from the communication having been made to her servant. I mentioned my fears to Miss Nilow, who removed them, by assuring me that her servant was too much attached to her to betray her secret; and had, besides, an affection for Kudrin, so that she could answer for her discretion. Thus agreeably ended our conversation, though the commencement was rather tragical; and I received the vows of attachment and fidelity from an artless and innocent mind.

Miss Nilow did not depart till about six o'clock. I immediately sent for Kudrin, whom I reproached for his misconduct and indiscretion, by explaining the great danger to which he had exposed the whole society. I promised at the same time not to divulge his fault to the society; but insisted that he should in future avoid all farther explanation of the state of our affairs to the young woman. I likewise promised, in order to calm his uneasiness, that I would contrive matters so that he should take her with him. This poor wretch, on my first accusation, was seized with the most terrifying apprehensions, and fell to the ground at my feet, crying out for mercy, as he supposed I should deliver him up to the judgment of the society, from whom he had nothing to expect but death. But, on my conclusion, he arose, kissed my hand, and swore eternal fidelity. For my part, I was very well satisfied to have extricated myself out of such a disagreeable embarrassment, by settling affairs on so good a footing.

After the departure of Kudrin, I went to Mr. Cruftiew, who, being apprized in the morning, of Miss Nilow's intended visit, and seeing me come out so late, thought proper to rally me upon the occasion.

occasion. But his hilarity soon gave place to astonishment, when he heard what had passed. He was persuaded, he said, that I must have been born under a happy influence, and that nothing could fail us under such auspices. I laughed at his enthusiasm, though I was truly sensible of that good fortune which had removed so many unpleasant incidents.

On the 1st, Madame Nilow invited me to breakfast, and took me apart to enquire what I had done to her daughter, who used to be exceedingly in spirits at her return home, but had, since yesterday evening, been continually in tears. It was difficult to answer this home question; to which I could at first make no better reply than by saying, that Miss Nilow had imparted a secret to me, that related to herself alone, and was communicated under the seal of confidence, which I could not infringe. Madame Nilow laughed at this excuse, and afterwards ordered her daughter to be called, whom she required to release me from the injunction of secrecy, that I might be at liberty to relate what had passed between us yesterday; to which she answered, that she would intirely rely on my prudence, and that if I thought it necessary I was at liberty to speak, though she would be present, to know whether I spoke the truth. I then related that some person, with a view to injure me in Miss Aphanasia's opinion, had informed her that I was not of the Greek religion, and persuaded her to ask me to become of that faith: that she had accordingly made the proposal to me two days ago, to which I answered, that though, in my opinion, all religions were alike, I could not consent to make any change in mine; and upon her observing, that my determination might prevent our marriage, I replied, that then we should die without reproach, she was vexed, and our friendly intercourses had suffered a slight interruption, till a second opportunity for explanation offered itself. I added, that
in

in our last conversation I had expressed my hope that Miss Aphanasia would in future put less confidence in advisers. Madame Nilow, after having patiently heard my account, blamed her daughter for presuming to meddle in affairs of religion; and said, she hoped her prudence in future would prevent her going into any such extravagancies. She then retired, and left us at liberty. I embraced the opportunity to confirm the young lady in her resolution; and she assured me that I might remain perfectly easy with regard to her maid, who was as desirous as herself to see us safe in Europe. We finished our conversation on the happiness we should enjoy when at perfect liberty. After which I retired, and ordered a general meeting to be held on the 5th. I then visited Mr. Stephanow, whom I found under the application of blisters, having been in a continual delirium for three days and nights.

C H A P. XXIII.

Various proceedings.—The Chancellor receives information of the attempts of the exiles.—The Count's exertions to prevent the consequences of this discovery.

ON the 3d of April, Mr. Solmanow purchased twenty-two butts, and forwarded them to Tsekawka. Mr. Kuzneczow likewise advised me, that he had purchased a cask of brandy for seven hundred and eighty roubles, which I immediately paid. Messrs. Baturin and Wynbladth, who were commissioned to salt fish, also informed me, that they had prepared two casks of fish, and one cask of whale oil; but they could procure no more than four hundred and fifty pounds of flour.

On the 4th, Mr. Kuzneczow informed me that Mr. Csurin was going on board to set the ship to rights; and consequently those of our associates who were engaged in the vessel must be ready to depart on the 7th; and that in order to overlook the transactions of Mr. Csurin, he had determined likewise to go on board himself. I agreed to his proposal, earnestly advising him to exert every attention to promote the business intrusted to him; but at the same time to, hold himself in readiness to return at the first call. And, in order that our correspondence might be rendered more certain, I commissioned him to station a trusty native of Kamchatka at Mikutka, to carry my advices and orders to him. I was informed in the evening that the governor was indisposed.

On the 5th, I put off the meeting till the evening, on account of the necessity of visiting the governor.

On

On my arrival at the fort I found the whole family greatly afflicted, and the governor very ill with a violent cholic. I gave him a little extract of aloes with brandy, and had the pleasure to see him able to walk about by noon. He thanked me for my assistance, and begged I would give him a provision of the medicine which had done him so much service. I refused staying to dinner, and returned home; after which the general meeting was held, where I gave the society an account of the measures I had taken to secure the vessel *St. Peter* and *St. Paul*; but I thought it likewise necessary to express to the meeting my fears of some unfortunate accident. For this reason I required that no one in future would go into the town without a companion, and that they would not haunt public houses, where several disputes had arisen between the soldiers of the garrison or *coffacks*, and my people. I observed that the moment of the execution of our project was nearly approaching, for which reason it was of the utmost consequence to avoid every misunderstanding, and to be upon our guard. I therefore exhorted them to remain peaceably in their houses, and always near the chiefs which I had nominated, in order that they might come together in case of any unforeseen accident, and be in readiness to obey my orders. The whole company unanimously replied, that they would strictly obey my orders, and that I might depend on their fidelity. Their readiness gave me much satisfaction: I thanked them for their confidence in me, and regaled them with a large quantity of punch, the disposal of which employed the company till four in the morning.

On the 6th, I remained at home the whole day, at rest, except in the evening, when I made a visit to the governor. On the 7th, Mr. Kuzneczw took his leave with ten of our companions. This day

day Mr. Baturin informed me, that Ismailow, Boscarew and Zablikow had proposed a number of questions to him concerning the new colony; and that he overheard Ismailow whisper Boscarew, "we shall get nothing out of him, for he is Samuelowicz's friend, let us go to the others;" from which he suspected that these three men had received some information of our project. From this account I recollected, that Mr. Stephanow had been connected with these persons, and might have informed them of some of the particulars: I therefore went immediately to him, but he was not in a situation to answer any questions. Nothing therefore remained to be done, but to apply to Mr. Panow, whom I ordered to enquire for one of the three, and found his intentions, that I might take my measures in time.

Mr. Crustiew, when informed of this business, appeared very uneasy, which was a circumstance unusual in him, as he was a man of courage, and possessed great firmness of mind. After reflecting a short time, he told me, that he thought he should be able to sift the business to the bottom; but that there was reason to fear a discovery on the part of government which we could not avoid, supposing his ideas to be true; for he told me that Ismailow was related to the chancellor, and possessed his confidence. The strong marks of apprehension which I saw in Mr. Crustiew, obliged me to request his thoughts concerning the information of Baturin. He replied, that he was fearful of an intrigue among women; and said he was assured that it was Mr. Kuzneczow's intention to carry with him the sister of Serjeant Kuzmin; and that probably he had divulged the secret to that woman. On the other hand, he was convinced that Mr. Ismailow likewise kept company with the same person, whence he inferred, that Ismailow had got some hints of our project,

project, which led him to endeavour at a more perfect discovery.

Mr. Crustiew promised that he would use every exertion in his power to come at the truth by means of the woman, and advised me, in the mean time, to wait on the chancellor, and observe his behaviour, from which I might easily know whether his nephew had already spoken to him concerning his discovery.

These steps appearing reasonable, I determined immediately to wait on the chancellor, while Mr. Crustiew was employed in making his enquiries. On my arrival the chancellor received me with more politeness, but less cordiality, than usual. He ordered tea, and, during the time it was preparing, our discourse turned first on the government, in which the chancellor repeated all the advantages I had received from the chiefs, in forwarding my projects; and twice said that he hoped my zeal and conduct would justify their opinions and proceedings. In answer to his discourse, I replied, that I was greatly affected with the marks of goodness I had received, and should neglect no favourable occasion of shewing my gratitude. After a short pause, the chancellor asked me how far I was connected with Kuzneczow. I answered, that Mr. Kuzneczow having rendered me essential services at my first arrival at Kamchatka, when I was in the lowest state of indigence, I thought it proper to acknowledge his good offices, at a time when I was at my ease. He replied, that he hoped my motives were such as I expressed, but that he could not help taking notice that various reflections were made in the town concerning our intimacy; more particularly since Mr. Kuzneczow had been seen openly assisting the exiles, with a musket in his hand, at the time of their dispute with the soldiers and cossacks, respecting Mr. Stephanow.

This

This overture sufficiently shewed, that Mr. Ismailow had related his suspicions or perhaps discoveries to his uncle, for which reason I determined to clear the way by one effectual stroke. I therefore replied, that I saw clearly from whence this prejudice against Mr. Kuzneczow arose. I informed the chancellor, that Kuzneczow and his nephew kept company with the same woman, whom I named, being the sister of Serjeant Kuzmin; and observed, that jealousy had dictated this expedient to his nephew, with a view to prejudice his rival. I assured him that, with regard to myself, I was happy in the present opportunity of speaking my sentiments to him, as my benefactor. I admitted, that it might be very convenient, and not unbecoming Mr. Kuzneczow, to frequent the company of a common woman, though such a proceeding would very ill become his nephew, who enjoyed a distinguished rank. But what more particularly mortified my feelings in this business was, that I understood it to be the intention of his nephew to marry the girl; for which reason I had disposed Mr. Kuzneczow to persuade her to make a voyage with him to Ochoczk, where they were to be married. I ended my speech by observing, that I should have concealed this proof of my personal attachment to him, if there had not been reason to fear that silence, at this moment, might impair his friendship for me.

The chancellor listened very attentively, paused a moment, and then embraced me, saying, that if I had not come he might have taken a very dangerous step. He then informed me, that his nephew had constantly repeated to him for some days past, that he was certain Kuzneczow and myself intended to leave Kamchatka, and take some women with us; adding, that he was sure of our plot, but would come at the bottom of it by new inquiries. The chancellor proceeded to say, that, from the reiterated observations of his nephew, he had determined to

to send for Mr. Stephanow, and examine him; but that he now considered my arrival as a happy circumstance, since it had spared him the confusion of intimating his suspicions of me. My account, he said, had opened his eyes, and shewn him the necessity of regulating the conduct of his nephew.

Affairs being in this favourable train, I begged him to enquire of Captain Csurin whether it were not true that Kuzneczow intended to sail with him to Ochocz, and whether he had not contracted for the passage of a lady.

The chancellor immediately sent for Csurin, and after receiving the confirmation of what I had said from him, he promised me a complete satisfaction on the part of his nephew.

C H A P. XXIV.

The subject of the preceding chapter continued.

I WAS exceedingly happy in having remedied an affair of such a desperate nature, and hastened home, where I found Mr. Crustiew in the utmost uneasiness. He could not contain his anger at seeing me laugh; but began by informing me, that he was certain that the chancellor had received information concerning us, and was now busied in disclosing our projects to the government: for the sister of Kuzmin had informed him, that Mr. Ismailow had listened to her discourse with Kuzneczow, under her window; in which he had promised to marry her, if she would consent to go with him to Europe; observing, that the voyage would be long, but that he would make her amends by his love and fidelity. Upon which proposal she had demanded, how he supposed it would be in his power to fail to Europe; and Kuzneczow replied, that there was no reason to be uneasy about the success of any undertaking when directed by such chiefs as myself. She protested that Mr. Kuzneczow had said nothing more; but that, after his departure Ismailow entered, and insulted her, and directly afterwards went out, threatening to send Kuzneczow to the mines. She likewise told Mr. Crustiew that she had avoided speaking to Mr. Kuzneczow on the business, for fear of a quarrel.

Upon this intelligence I desired my friend to go immediately to the girl, and direct her to say, if she should be sent for by the chancellor, that Mr. Kuzneczow had proposed and agreed with her to

go

go to Ochoczk, where they were to be married, and that I had promised her a marriage portion of a thousand roubles, provided she would depart and avoid the visits of Mr. Ismailow. Mr. Crustiew was perfectly astonished at this message, and asked if I thought him out of his senses. I saw that he did not comprehend my intentions, and therefore gave him an account of my conversation with the chancellor, upon which he perfectly understood the whole business, and hastened to execute my commission. For my part, as Mr. Kuzneczow was not yet gone, I sent for him, and gave him instructions likewise, in case he should be questioned by the chancellor. These measures being taken, I found my mind more at ease, and went to rest late at night, for I had found it impossible to take any repose during the continuance of my apprehensions.

On the 8th, I learned that the chancellor had examined Kuzneczow and the sister of Kuzmin separately, and at day-break had sent his nephew to Verchney Ostrogg, with orders not to return to Bolfaretz without his consent. In the evening the chancellor himself came to me, made a thousand excuses for his suspicions, and begged me to accept the portion I had promised the girl, which, however, I refused, at the same time intreating him to excuse my taking it, as a proof of his confidence in my good intentions.

On the 9th, Mr. Kuzneczow informed me of his departure, and assured me that I might entirely depend on Mr. Csurin. This news was some consolation to me; for though the chancellor was apparently reconciled, I could no longer depend on his confidence. I knew that inquisitive disposition would not permit him to banish the adventure of his nephew from his mind; and as the slightest ap-
pearances

pearances might revive his suspicions, I thought it proper to keep my people constantly assembled. With a view likewise to secure myself against any surprize, I engaged Miss Nilow to pay a strict attention to every thing that passed at the governor's house, especially when the chancellor was present.

The same day I assembled the company, to whom I gave an account of all that had passed between me and the chancellor, and declared, that though all our measures were perfectly well established, I was morally sure that they would be ineffectual, because I had every reason to think that we should be discovered before the time of the departure of the vessel. In consequence of this discouraging prospect, I said that I should proceed to propose to the company another regulation. The meeting unanimously assured me, that they would agree to every step which I should think proper to be taken, so that I needed only to give my orders, which would be immediately complied with. On this declaration, which was so full of confidence, I represented to them that it would be impossible for us to resist the force which government might employ against us, if we remained near the town, and, therefore that on the first intimation of a discovery, I should propose to the company to retire to the sea-side, where we might defend ourselves in the intrenchment of the light-house, which was provided with four large pieces of cannon, which would be sufficient to keep the assailants at a distance; and, in the mean time, as I could depend on Mr. Csurin, I would direct him to bring the vessel out of the bay, by towing her through the ice, and that I did not despair of carrying this project into execution in the course of eight days.

The company replied, that this step was salutary, and necessary to be carried into execution. I therefore

fore drew up instructions for Mr. Kuznecow, which I forwarded to him by the hands of Sibeaw, at the same time that I directed Mr. Panow to distribute money to several of our associates, to purchase gunpowder in all the shops, and, if possible, at the great magazine. For I had been informed that the cannon of the redoubt of the light-house was well provided with bullets and grape shot, though the quantity of powder was insufficient to fire six shot. I passed the rest of the day with Mr. Crustiew, in conference on the means necessary to be adopted in the present exigence of our circumstances.

C H A P. XXV.

Various proceedings relative to the projected escape of the exiles, and the discoveries made by government.

ON the 10th, Mr. Baturin informed me, that Boscarew and Zablikow had written a letter to Mr. Stephanow, which was to be put into his hands by a Kamchadal woman. I immediately sent notice to Mr. Panow, who undertook to watch his relation, to whom he went without delay, and returned with the letter, which he said had been delivered the instant before by the woman, and that after reading it, Stephanow had said, "I am the unhappy wretch who have produced all the mischief which may follow;" and then intreated his relation to carry the letter to me, with a request that I would cause these two men to be put to death, in order to preserve our secret: for he confessed he had revealed the greatest part of it to them. The contents of the letter were as follows:

"The treatment you have experienced from the unworthy chief whom you have chosen, has excited our compassion. We are informed that your illness is not real, but that you are a prisoner, and, we therefore take this opportunity of assuring you, that we are ready to deliver you, and that you may depend on our willingness to sacrifice our lives in the attempt. The oath we entered into with you has prevented us from betraying your abominable chief; besides which, we were unwilling to be the authors of the destruction

“struction of so many brave men as have entered
 “into the association. If your life be in safety,
 “send us some intimation, and inform us at what
 “hour of the night we can enter your prison with-
 “out being discovered; but if you think it proper
 “for our interests, that we should deliver you from
 “the tyrant, let us know your wish, and his death
 “is certain. Remember the engagements you
 “have entered into with us, and be assured of our
 “fidelity.

“Signed, BOSCAREW and ZABLIKOW.”

I read this letter in the presence of some of the associates, to their no small consternation. Several of them were desirous of going to seek these two bravos, with whom they proposed to quarrel, and then dispatch them. Mr. Panow supported this opinion; but, for my part, I declared that I could not, without regret, consent to be the cause of the death of two such determined young men, especially as I had reason to think we might avail ourselves of their services. For this purpose I proposed that Mr. Panow should persuade his relation to send them an answer, which I would draw up; as I was well assured that we might cause them to join us by this means, provided Mr. Stephanow consented to assist. Mr. Panow answered for him, whereupon I drew up the following minute:

“You will be convinced that my illness is real
 “when you see my hand-writing. I have kept my
 “bed from the day I last saw you. I thank you,
 “my friends, for the assistance you offer, though it
 “is unnecessary; for, I can assure you, that my
 “whole consolation at present consists in the acknow-
 “ledgment of my improper conduct towards my
 “chief. You hate him, because I have described
 “him to you as a man worthy of hatred; but, I
 P 2 “earnestly

“ earnestly intreat you, by the oath we have entered into, not to aggravate my remorse, by making any attempt against this worthy and respectable chief. I thought him my enemy, and acted accordingly; I even fought his death. Doubtless you have concluded that he would revenge himself; but, on the contrary, he has declared himself my protector, and has preserved my life at the risk of his own. It is to him I am indebted for my safety, and I intreat you to respect the protector as your friend. I have written this letter, to prevent the consequences of your impetuosity; hasten then to me, that I may inform you concerning my situation. You are at perfect liberty to come, and I flatter myself that, on an interview, I shall render you an essential service, by bringing you acquainted with a man to whom you may unite.”

This answer being approved of, Mr. Panow carried it to his relation, who copied it, and sent it back by the messenger who had brought him the letter. About eleven in the evening Mr. Panow requested me to come to his friend, who was desirous of introducing Messrs. Boscarew and Zablikow to me, with six other associates. When I arrived Mr. Stephanow begged me to come near his bed, took my hand and kissed it. He then proceeded to recapitulate all his faults, enumerated the marks of kindness and confidence he had received, and concluded, by intreating my forgiveness; after which, without giving me time to reply, he presented Messrs. Boscarew and Zablikow to me, with their companions; with the assurance that they desired to join our association, and that he could answer for their fidelity and attachment. On this offer I asked the gentlemen whether they were firmly resolved to enter into our society without being informed of our

our projects and measures? To which they answered, that they had been informed of every thing, and were determined to acknowledge me as their chief, from their knowledge of the inducements. After this short explanation I informed them, that I would expect them at three o'clock to-morrow, in order to proceed in their reception. But as they requested I would permit them to remain in future with us, I consented that they should stay all night; for they protested that they would not quit our dwelling till they were admitted members of the society.

On the 11th, I visited the governor, who seemed to be meditating on some subject that occupied his attention, and as it was of consequence for me to become acquainted with the reason of his serious deportment, I enquired, and received for answer, that he believed the chancellor was out of his senses, because he had been talking to him of an enterprize purely chimerical; for, continued he, the fool suspects you of an intention to desert, and has vexed me so much, that I have sent him away in an ill humour: he has even dared to accuse my daughter of being a party in your plot. I answered, laughing, that I was very well acquainted with the weakness of the chancellor, who though a worthy character, had suffered himself to be led by his nephew Ismailow, a man jealous of my good fortune, and at enmity with one of my friends, Kuzneczow. I informed the governor, that Ismailow had composed a fiction, which had turned the chancellor's head; and then, without hesitation, I related all that had happened. My story put the governor into a cheerful humour. He sent for the chancellor, who was surprized to find me seated with the governor. The latter began the conversation by acquainting him that he had informed me the whole of the chancellor's

cellor's suspicions ; and that, on the other hand, I had acquainted him with all that had passed between us. The chancellor seemed to pay very little attention to this, but told me flatly that I was guilty, and that he repented the indulgence he had shewn me in regard to time ; but as he was so lucky as to find me in a place of surety, he should exhibit his proofs, and had no doubt but they would be sufficient to induce the governor to send me to prison. He then drew out of his pocket a letter from his nephew, which contained a confirmation of his first accusation, and an appeal to Messrs. Boscarew and Zablikow, which, when he had read, he demanded of the governor whether he had reason or no to accuse me. The governor seemed to hesitate ; but I seized the moment to propose, that those two witnesses might be sent for, and promised that I would own myself guilty, if they could prove the least delinquency against me. In support of my proposition, I observed, that he well knew Stephanow to be my irreconcilable enemy, and that Boscarew and Zablikow were his intimate friends ; who, consequently, were in no danger of giving a flattering deposition in my favour. I requested, moreover, that the governor would permit me to retire into his cabinet during the examination.

This proposal was agreed to by the governor, and the chancellor was in the greatest rage to see himself dared to this point. He therefore required them to be sent for, and as I had told him they were then with Stephanow, the messengers were sent directly thither. In the mean time I took the liberty to rally the chancellor on his discovery. But the governor protested, that if the alarm he had raised should prove unfounded, he would break off his friendship with him.

At length, however, the two witnesses were announced, and I retired. The chancellor shewed them the
the

the letter, and they replied, that they knew the hand writing perfectly, though they were ignorant of the subject on which it was written, and, in a word, they knew nothing of any plot. They observed that it was true that they were intimate with Mr. Stephanow, who had complained to them against me, in consequence of which they had declared themselves my enemies, and had sought occasions of quarrelling with me; but that their opposition was personal, and did not require them to depart from their characters as men of veracity. To this they added, that they recollected perfectly well, that Mr. Ismailow had some days before related to them a feigned story, contrived by himself, and had misled them so far as to cause them to seek opportunities of quarrelling, with a view to do me a mischief. But that since they had found that the whole of Mr. Ismailow's narration was false, they had given up their quarrel, and were much mortified to find, that they had been so far misled and involved; though they could not avoid expressing their determination, that Ismailow should sooner or later give them an account of his conduct.

After this declaration, the governor politely dismissed Messrs. Boscarew and Zablikow, with the request that they would continue to entertain the same sentiments of esteem and friendship for me. He then brought me out of his cabinet to be a witness of the confusion of the chancellor, who scarcely durst look me in the face. I did not fail, however, to do my utmost to restore his confidence: and, by dint of intreaty, I at last prevailed on him to speak. He apologized for his error, by laying the blame on the malice of his nephew, against whom he breathed forth imprecations. He made the best excuses he could to the governor, who let him understand that he did not approve such liberties. Thus
the

the whole business of conciliation fell upon me, which, however, I performed with success, by the help of a few glasses of brandy.

This affair being accomplished, I went to Madame Nilow and her daughter, who received me with open arms. The account I gave of what had passed astonished and alarmed them for the moment; but the happy termination was very satisfactory to them all, more especially Miss Aphanasia, who was not a little uneasy at the beginning of my narrative. I then took my leave, and blessed the happy chance that had afforded me the means of receiving into my party two such dangerous evidences, whose intimate acquaintance with all our designs had put us completely in their power.

C H A P. XXVI:

Proceedings of the government of Kamchatka, in consequence of the discovery of the Count's plan to liberate the exiles.

ON my return home, I dined, and after dinner the ceremony of the reception of Messrs. Boscarew and Zablikow was performed: after which I proceeded to relate to my companions the dangers I had passed, and publickly thanked our new associates for their eminent service.

We passed the evening together, and I did not quit the meeting, till I was informed of the arrival of the chancellor, who came to complete our reconciliation. I remonstrated strongly with him on the absurdity of his conduct, and assured him that, though I had done my best to reconcile him with the governor, he must not attribute this proceeding to my want of a due sense of the injury I sustained, but to a desire of seeing harmony prevail among the chiefs. I observed, that he ought to have mistrusted the insinuations of his nephew after the former discovery of his plot, and the falsehood he had been proved to be guilty of. And I concluded by informing him, that I was willing to overlook this second affront; but that if he should suffer himself to be misled into such an error a third time, I would not fail to seek my revenge. The chancellor protested that in future he would act with sincerity towards me, and we parted good friends.

On

On the 12th, I received a letter from Mr. Kuzneczow, wherein he informed me that Mr. Csurin was busy in fitting out his vessel, but that it was impossible to clear the ice during the present month: That he would answer for the taking of the redoubt, the fire of which would protect the ship, while the vessel in return would clear the approaches to the redoubt: That Mr. Csurin was disposed to share our fortune at all risks, as he had his lady with him: And lastly, he concluded his letter by intreating me to facilitate the means of his female friend joining him. The friendship and attachment of Mr. Kuzneczow entitled him to every return in my power; for which reason I charged Sibaew, who brought the letter, to send La Kufmika to Csekawka in one of the boats.

After dinner I was seized with a violent cholic, succeeded by a fever, which forced me to go to bed. In the night I grew worse, which obliged me to send for Messrs. Crustiew and Panow, to whom I intrusted the care and superintendence of the company.

On the 13th, Mr. Crustiew having acquainted Miss Aphanasia with my illness, she hastened to see me, and, as I was informed after my recovery, never quitted my bed-side, nor suffered any other person to attend me. The fever continued, without any regular period, during the 14th, 15th and 16th. On the 17th Mr. Meder bled me, and on the 18th he prescribed an emetic, by which treatment the fever left me on the 19th.

On the 20th, I was able to quit my bed, and Miss Aphanasia informed her mother of my recovery, who came together with her other children, to congratulate me on the occasion. It was at this time I was informed of the services Miss Aphanasia had done; I thanked her with the utmost sincerity, and was convinced that my gratitude affected her exceedingly. After the departure of Madame Nilow, though her daughter staid with me, Mr. Crustiew
gave

gave me an account that all our arrangements were in good order, and that the tranquillity which prevailed every where with respect to our interests was such that we had no reason for any apprehensions.

On the 21st, I thought it necessary to persuade Miss Aphanasia to return home, for which purpose I represented to her that her presence was necessary to prevent our being surprized, for want of that information respecting what passed at her father's, which no one could better obtain than herself. For these reasons I urged her to return as speedily as possible: she admitted their force, and left me with tears.

After her departure, Mr. Crustiew informed me of his suspicions that the chancellor, in conjunction with the hettman, was meditating our destruction: For the hettman, he understood, was gone two days before to Verchney Ostrogg, and he had every reason to believe that the adventure of the death of Levontiew was his motive, because Boscarew and Zablikow had received a letter from Ismailow, who supposed them still his friends, in which he informed them of the discovery of an assassination committed by my order. In confirmation of this opinion Mr. Crustiew shewed me the letter, which clearly convinced me, that it became us to prepare for an open attack: for though I was well assured that the circumstances which had accompanied the death of Levontiew could not be brought in evidence against me, yet I had just reason to fear that the deposition of the tajon, who had put the letter directed to the governor into my hands, would produce an effect which, supported by the credit of the chancellor and hettman, could not fail to overthrow me. The more I reflected on this business, the more critical I found it, and as I was still too weak to sit up for any length of time, I gave Mr. Crustiew a charge to admit the two exiles, companions

panions of Mr. Ivaskin, into our society, as I was sufficiently convinced of their attachment. This was done the same day, and they were so well satisfied with this mark of confidence, that they thanked me on their knees for the favour I had bestowed on them, as, they said, of receiving them into my company, and giving them an opportunity either of avenging themselves of the unjust government which had oppressed them, or of dying in the attempt.

On the 22d, I assembled the whole company, and caused arms and the necessary ammunition to be distributed to each, in order that, in case our dwellings should be invested, they might not be unprovided; and as there was reason to fear an attack in the night, I gave regular orders for a guard and patrol. The arms were distributed in the night for the greater secrecy.

On the 23d, Miss Aphanasia came to see me incognito. She informed me, that her mother was in tears, and her father had talked with her in a manner which gave reason to fear that he suspected our plot. She conjured me to be careful, and not to come to the fort, if sent for. She expressed her fears that it would not be in her power to come to me again, but promised she would, in that case, send her servant; and she intreated me, at all events, if I should be compelled to use force against government, that I would be careful of the life of her father, and not endanger my own. I tenderly embraced this charming young lady, and thanked her for the interest she took in my preservation; and as it appeared important that her absence should not be discovered, I begged her to return, and recommend the issue of our intentions to good fortune. Before her departure I reminded her to look minutely after her father, and to find me a red ribband in case government should determine to arrest or attack me, and, in the second place, that at the moment
of

of an alarm she would open the shutter of her window, which looked to the garden, and cause a sledge to be laid over the ditch on that side. She promised to comply with my instructions, and confirmed her promises with vows and tears.

As soon as Miss Aphanasia was gone, I thought it proper to set up a pole for the conveniency of hoisting a light, and, at the same time, I sent instructions to my companions that the light should be the signal for rallying.

On the 24th, being busied in preparing against every surprize, I caused a bridge to be broken down, which had been laid over a ravine that separated us from the town; and, instead of the bridge, I caused a single plank to be laid; over which no more than one person could pass at a time. At three in the afternoon, Mr. Cruftiew informed me that the hettman was on his return, and had brought with him the tapon in question, and that Ismailow was likewise with his uncle. This information was sufficient to point out the steps it became us to take; but, in order to obtain a more perfect knowledge of the state of affairs, we sent ten of our associates of the party of Boscarew on discovery. They did not return till very late in the evening, and reported, that the hettman had had a long conference with the chancellor, and that about five in the evening, they had waited on the governor, accompanied by Ismailow and a Kamschadal chief. This report caused us to double our guard and patrole, and the whole society remained under arms.

On the 25th, in the morning, Miss Aphanasia's servant brought me a red ribband. She told me verbally, to beware of coming to the fort; that her mistress, as well as Madame Nilow, was in tears, as the governor had treated them with great severity, and had even struck his lady. About ten o'clock the governor sent a serjeant to me, to invite me to breakfast;

breakfast; to which I answered, that as I was not quite recovered of a dangerous illness, I could not wait upon him then, but hoped I should be able to have that pleasure to-morrow. The serjeant answered by advising me to go by fair means, if I did not wish to be dragged to the fort by main force. To this I replied in short, by desiring him to mind his own business, and carry my answer; at the same time that I advised him to make his confession before he ventured to come on any such enterprize.

About noon I saw the hettman coming towards our house. I received him very politely, and he informed me that he came on the part of the governor to persuade me to come to the fort. The business, he told me in confidence, was to discuss one of the ridiculous fancies of the chancellor, which I might easily overthrow, and consequently, that I ought to make no difficulty in accompanying him. But when I replied, that my illness did not permit me to wait upon the governor, and that I certainly should not go that day, he became angry, and threatened to force me thither by his Cossacks. I laughed at his threats, which did not tend to restore his calmness. He called out to his Cossacks to come in and compel me to follow him. I whistled, and five of my companions instantly rushed in, and disarmed the hettman and two Cossacks, to whom I declared that they were my prisoners.

After this stroke, the hettman asked permission to write to the governor, and I promised to dispatch a letter from him, provided it was first submitted to my perusal. In his letter he proposed to the governor to enter into terms with me, at the same time informing him that he was himself detained as a prisoner. Together with his letter I sent one in my own name to the governor, in which I explained that the premeditated treachery of the chancellor, which I was sufficiently informed of, had induced

me

me to take this step, and that I entreated him not to consider it as an attempt to incite an insurrection, as it depended on his excellency's pleasure to permit me to depart for Lopatka.

About five in the evening, the governor sent me word, that if I did not set the hettman at liberty, I should pay for my insolence at the price of my life; that my trial would be proceeded on in full assembly the next day, where, if I should be found innocent, he would take care that I should receive satisfaction from the chancellor; but that, in case I was conscious of guilt, he advised me to come and apply to the goodness and clemency of the throne for my pardon.

In a written answer to this message I replied, that if myself alone were personally concerned, I would not hesitate a moment to appear before him; but as the chief of a party, acknowledged as such by his own proper order, I could not act without consulting my companions: and, as it was late, I proposed likewise to consult them on the morrow. I added, that my personal conduct, as well as the liberty of the hettman, would depend on their decision.

At nine in the evening I sent a party of six associates to seize the chancellor, but he took care not to stir out of the fort; in his stead, however, they brought me Ismailow, his nephew, Szudeikin, his secretary, and the tajon, who was intended to be produced in evidence against me.

On the 26th, I received two red ribbands from Miss Aphanasia, at the same time that I learned from one of our associates, that the governor had summoned a council, at which no one could give an account how Ismailow and the tajon had been carried off; that, as no witnesses appeared, the governor had reproached the chancellor, and threatened him with the effects of his anger, calling him a traitor, who took a pleasure in exciting disturbances; and lastly, that every one was persuaded that, the
accusation

accusation of the chancellor being false, Ismailow and the tajon had disappeared, because incapable of standing the examination. He further reported, that the governor, enraged at the witnesses not appearing, had dismissed the council, and retired to the fort.

At eleven o'clock I received a message that the governor was convinced of my innocence, and consented that the company should keep Mr. Hettman as an hostage; but that, for the sake of the form, he would send four soldiers for me, to whom he begged me to surrender. In reply to this message I answered, that I would entirely depend on the word and honour of the governor, who might send his guard for me, and that in the mean time I would do every thing in my power to persuade my associates to consent to my departure, which I had no doubt they would agree to, in consideration of their holding the hettman as an hostage.

Immediately after I had dismissed this messenger, I received another, with a letter from Miss Aphanasia, who intreated me to come to the governor, and assured me that her father was more prejudiced in my favour than ever. I could depend on the integrity and attachment of this amiable young lady, and her letter might have its influence on me, if I had not observed that it contained many clippings of red ribband, which shewed me in what manner to proceed. I therefore gave orders to Messrs. Baturin, Wynbladth, and Panow, to place themselves at the head of their divisions, in readiness to act in the night, as I expected an attack, from the information I had received, that the soldiers of the garrison, as well as the Cossacks of the town, were busied in preparing their arms. Our number amounted to fifty-seven persons, but Mr. Crustiew informed me that he had sent an order to Mr.

Kuzneczow

Mr. Kuzneczow to return with his people, and that he expected him at the close of the night. In order that I might not be taken by surprize, I formed three divisions, who stationed themselves round my house, while the fourth division remained within.

C H A P. XXVII.

The Government sends a military force to take the Count prisoner.—The exiles oppose them, and by their superior bravery and military skill, assisted by a fortunate concurrence of events, they gain possession of the fort.—The Governor is slain in the attack.

AT five in the evening, I observed a corporal with four grenadiers, who came and stopped at my door, where they called out to me to open it by order of the Empress. I jocularly answered that he lied, for that the Empress being at Petersburg, would not honour such a rascal as him with her orders; but told him that if he thought proper to behave with civility, we might perhaps transact our affairs in an amicable manner. Upon this he said, that the governor had informed him that it was agreed I should follow him, and consequently that he was ready to comply with my wishes in every respect. I then proposed that he should enter alone to drink a glass with me, and afterwards take charge of some papers that were necessary to be presented to the governor. He consented, and I accordingly admitted him, shutting the door after him, at which

instant he beheld four pistols presented to his breast, and was threatened with instant death if he should dare to utter a single word. After conducting him into my chamber, I questioned him concerning every particular I was desirous of knowing, and when his deposition was finished, I ordered him to call the soldiers one by one, each by name, to come in and drink a glass, which he was forced to comply with. In this manner I became master of the detachment, which I caused to be bound, and deposited safely in the cellar.

At nine in the evening I received notice that a detachment had been observed on their way towards the ravine. I therefore took the detachment of Wynbladth with me, and called out to them not to attempt to pass. They answered by several musket shot; in return for which I ordered my party to fire on those who were foremost, and after three had fallen the detachment remained motionless, and lay close with their faces to the ground. I could easily observe however that the officer had dispatched a man towards the fortress, no doubt with the intention of requesting assistance. For this reason I sent out a person upon discovery, but nothing was perceived 'till about eleven o'clock, when I received information that a body of troops were advancing towards our rear, and that from the noise there was reason to believe they had cannon with them. I gave orders to Mr. Wynbladth to observe the detachment at the ravine, and after causing the division of the center to join me, I myself advanced towards the enemy's troops. Before we met, I saw Mr. Stephanow, who, though scarcely able to walk, came armed, and had only time to tell me that he came to conquer or die with me. This resolution secured him my esteem; for tho' the poor man could scarcely support himself, he nevertheless did every thing in his power to encourage the associates.

When

When we came within the distance of fifty paces, the commanding officer of the detachment called out to us to surrender ourselves prisoners, otherwise he would not spare us. I replied that it was necessary we should know the conditions, and he in return asked what conditions I wished to propose. Our conference led us within fifteen paces of them, at which distance we began our fire, and our adversaries were so disheartened at our first discharge, that they left their cannon and fled hastily towards the wood. The officer was highly to blame in this respect, for if he had retired towards the fortress, we could never have forced it. His misconduct inspired me with hope. No more than a short quarter of an hour was required to collect my people. I availed myself of their artillery; to fire on the detachment placed behind the ravine; and my fire, though in the air, prevented any of them from venturing to rise; so that I had perfect liberty to approach the fort. The sentinel seeing us come with cannon, took us for the detachment, and, after challenging us, asked if we had brought the prisoners, to which I caused one of my people to answer in the affirmative. The man then worked like a fury to lower the drawbridge; which done, we entered with spirit, and finding only twelve men of the guard, they were quickly dispatched. While a party of my associates mounted to clear the casemates, I caused the drawbridge to be raised, and placed a guard. These precautions being taken, as I heard a firing in the court, and saw that my comrades were fastening the petard to force the inner gates, I ventured to pass through a window which I found open. Madame Nilow and her children, at sight of me, implored my protection to save their father and husband. I immediately hastened to his apartment, and begged him to go to his childrens room to preserve his life; but he

answered that he would first take mine, and instantly fired a pistol, which wounded me: I was desirous, nevertheless, of preserving him, and continued to represent that all resistance would be useless, for which reason I intreated him to retire. His wife and children threw themselves on their knees, but nothing would avail: he flew upon me, seized me by the throat, and left me no other alternative than either to give up my own life, or run my sword through his body. At this instant the petard exploded and burst the outer gate. The second was open, and I saw Mr. Panow enter at the head of a party. He entreated the governor to let me go, but not being able to prevail on him, he set me at liberty by splitting his skull.

April 27th. No words can describe the unhappy scene this event produced: Madame Nilow fell at my feet, her daughters fainted, and the firmness of my mind was scarcely equal to the shock. I was ready to sink to the ground, when Mr. Panow seeing me in this situation obliged me to quit the apartment, and assured me that he would take care of Madame Nilow and her family. He begged I would hasten to a party of my associates, who were still fighting with the soldiers. I went out into the court, where I saw a new spectacle; it was covered with dead and wounded, some of whom informed me that our companions were busied in forcing a subterraneous place, in which several soldiers had taken refuge. I made haste to save the lives of these unfortunate men, and having met with Mr. Wynbladth and Crustiew, with four other associates, quickened my steps towards the bastion under which the casemate was, when all at once we heard a musket shot, and the cry of enemies. These shots were followed by regular discharges, which convinced us that they could not proceed from the fire of our people, who were dispersed in various places. We therefore re-
turned

turned to our centinel, who kept constantly calling out, the enemy! When we came to him, and mounted the banquet of the palisade, we saw a large party of Cossacks making preparations for an attack. In consequence of this, I detached Mr. Wynbladth to collect all the associates, leaving only a guard of four men to watch over the soldiers in the casemate; and in the mean time I was forced to sustain a brisk attack. It was a fortunate circumstance, however, that the ladders which the Cossacks had brought were too short, and the obscurity of the night did not permit our enemies to observe the weakest places of the fort. Their continual fire assisted us to direct our murdering pieces at them, which slew fourteen men in ten minutes, while no one on our side had received a wound. On the arrival of Mr. Wynbladth with twenty-two associates, we mounted two three-pounders on the platform: two rounds from these were sufficient to disperse our military opponents.

After their retreat, as we had reason to fear a second attempt, we busied ourselves in mounting and charging all the cannon of the place, and afterwards cleared the court-yard and casemates of the dead. The associates obeyed my orders with the greatest zeal and activity; so that at three in the morning every thing was in perfect order.

C H A P. XXVIII.

The proceedings of the Count and his party of exiles, from the time of gaining possession of the fort, to the time of the surrender of the military force of the government, who gave hostages to the Count.

THE centinel of the bastion having heard a second noise on the city side, I went up myself and saw several lighted torches in motion, which determined me to send out some persons to make discoveries. Mr. Crustiew undertook this commission, with two of the associates.

After their departure I sent to request permission to see Madame Nilow, which being granted, I waited upon her and found her on her bed. I threw myself at her feet to beg her pardon for having been the involuntary cause of the death of her husband, and intreated her to consider my behaviour towards him, when I was desirous of preserving his life at the risk of my own. Her grief, extreme as it was, did not urge her to make any reproaches: she only asked for her children, and begged that the guard Mr. Panow had set over herself and them might be withdrawn. But when I informed her that the guard was designed merely for her preservation, she consented that it might remain. With respect to her children I was ignorant where they had been secured; but a servant informed us that Mr. Panow had conducted them into the hall, and had taken care to have them bled by Mr. Lapin. This suggestion reminded me of the propriety of Madame Nilow's undergoing the same operation, to which she consented: I therefore hastened to send
Mr. Lapin

Mr. Lapin with directions for that purpose; and as I did not think it decent to intrude myself upon a family so overwhelmed with misfortune, I recommended to this gentleman to use every care and attention in his power to mitigate the distresses of their situation.

When I went out to visit the posts, I received advice that Mr. Cruftiew had returned, and I therefore went to enquire what he had discovered. He informed me that the town was entirely abandoned by the men; that the hettman, delivered from his imprisonment by a party of men, had armed all the Cossacks, and had retired to the heights at half a league distant from the fort, where he declared he would starve us out; and his troops did not amount to less than seven or eight hundred men.

On this information I assembled my companions, and represented to them that we were certainly out of the danger of an attack in the fort, but that if we should defer the taking a speedy resolution to act without losing a single moment, we should, perhaps, find ourselves, in the course of twenty-four hours, so well invested, that we should not be able to get out, and by that means should be reduced to surrender at discretion from mere hunger. I informed the company of the report of Mr. Cruftiew, and requested every one to give his advice respecting the proper steps to be taken in the present state of embarrassment. But as no plan was agreed on, I disclosed mine, which I had already formed beforehand, the moment I was informed of the resolution of Mr. Hettman. It was as follows:

I declared my resolution to send a detachment of twenty-two or twenty-four associates into the town, to drive all the women and children into the church; that as soon as they should be there secured, all the furniture of wood and other combustible matters which could be found, should be piled round the church

church; and when every thing should be thus disposed, which was very possible to be done before day-break, notice should be given to the women to prepare themselves for death, at the same time that they should be informed that the determination of their husbands to oppose us by force had left us no other expedient than to sacrifice their families. And lastly, that after this declaration it should be proposed to the women to send three of their number, with twelve young girls, to their parents, to require them to lay down their arms.

The company agreed to this proposal, and Mr. Panow undertook to carry it into execution. But he observed that it was necessary, in his opinion, to convey the body of the governor into the same church, with the intention of more effectually intimidating the women. After his departure I gave the necessary orders, and the body of this unfortunate chief, whose life had been ever dear to me, was instantly carried to the place of destination.

The continual hurry of action had made me forget my wound; but I was desirous of taking advantage of this moment of tranquillity, and accordingly sent for Mr. Lapin, who declared that the consequences might be dangerous, because I had suffered the blood to coagulate. In fact the frost had coagulated a large quantity, and, in order to thaw it, I was obliged to approach the fire, which gave me the most excruciating pain. I could not stand up nor walk until Mr. Lapin had extracted the ball, in which operation I found him very skilful. After my wound had been dressed, as I was not capable of using my leg, he caused me to be conveyed into the chamber where the rest of the wounded men were, and where I had the mortification to see nine dead, and seven dangerously wounded of my party, with more than fifty soldiers of the garrison wounded; the dead having been
thrown

thrown into one of the bastions. When I had given orders that the necessary assistance might be administered to all who were in want of it, I retired into the hall of the chancery to rest; but my uneasiness respecting the success of my project, did not permit me to take any repose until the return of Mr. Panow, who related that he had shut up more than a thousand women, girls and infants, who had all unanimously requested leave to send some one of their number to their husbands, whom they promised to bring back to our feet.

The day beginning to appear, I thought proper to hasten this expedition, and determined to send one of my associates with the woman, beating a drum as the sign of a parley, at the same time that he should carry a proper summons to the following effect:

“ We are informed of the resolution you have
 “ taken to block us up in the fort, and reduce us
 “ to the necessity either to perish by hunger, or have
 “ recourse to your mercy by surrendering at discre-
 “ tion. This resolution shews very little judg-
 “ ment on your part; for in truth it is impossible
 “ for you to persuade us that your determinations
 “ are directed to this end, while you have left in
 “ our power the most precious deposit which nature
 “ has given you, your wives, your daughters, and
 “ your children; who must secure us from your
 “ senseless rage, unless you are monsters abhorred
 “ by nature. You will be the real executioners
 “ of your families, and their blood will cry out for
 “ vengeance against you. It remains in the mean
 “ time for you to adopt one of the two propositions
 “ we here make.

“ 1. We demand that, one hour after the recep-
 “ tion of this message, you shall set at liberty the
 “ four associates you made prisoners at the time the
 “ hettman was set at liberty; and that afterwards
 “ you

“ you shall lay down your arms, and present yourselves unarmed at the fort, in order that we may take hostages from amongst you, which may be necessary to prevent such incidents as may hereafter occasion new hostilities.

“ 2. That, on your refusal to comply with these proposals, we will set fire to the church in which your wives and children are confined. It shall be their tomb; their cries will convince you of the accomplishment of our resolution.

“ We send the present to you at nine o'clock precisely; hasten to assemble, and carry into execution such resolutions as you may judge most suitable to your present situation. Our resolution shall be carried into effect at ten precisely.”

After having caused the present writing to be signed by the chiefs of our association, I sent Sibew towards the Cossacks, with four women and twelve children.

After the departure of our messenger the associates busied themselves in amassing the wood of chairs, tables, &c. and different utensils round the church. About eight o'clock Madame Nilow asked to speak with me; but when she heard that I could not rise to pay my respects to her, she came herself, with her youngest daughter. The fatigue I had endured throughout the night, and the effusion of blood which had altered my countenance, made her to forget her own grief. She ran towards me, and her first words, which expressed her fears for my situation, afforded no small consolation to my mind. This worthy lady, after shewing a proper sense of the loss of her husband, told me, that, though propriety forbid her seeing me, she could not avoid declaring at that moment that she acknowledged my innocence in all that had passed; and that she had with wonder beheld my forbearance, at the time when wounded by her husband, and in the most imminent danger

danger of my life, I did not use my arms against him. For this cause, she said, I was justified in her opinion; but that, as it would be impossible for her to make the public adopt the same sentiments, she had resolved to retire immediately after the funeral of her husband; for the performance of which she requested my permission and support. She continued her discourse by telling me, that, with regard to her daughter, as she saw her firmly attached to my person, and could not expose her to the resentment of her sisters and her family, she consented to put her into my hands, provided I would promise to establish her in the manner I had assured her, by marriage. In this situation, urged by the necessity of calming the mind of an unhappy mother, whose virtue and firmness of soul I have every reason to admire, I promised all she required. She then embraced her daughter, advised her always to preserve the same attachment to me, and wished her every happiness; and at last hastily rising, she passionately exclaimed, you are the cause of the loss of her father, become her husband, and be a father to her!

She departed, and her daughter informed me that she had been tormented by the reproaches of her sisters, who openly accused her of having been in the plot, though she would have gladly consented to the loss of her own life to have preserved that of her father. At these words she burst into tears, but continued her discourse by observing, that, in the present situation, no other resource offered itself to her but to follow me: but, in order that the public might not reproach her mother for having consented to her departure with me, she requested that I would cause her to be carried off. I promised to proceed accordingly; after which she likewise retired, wishing me success in the conduct of my enterprise.

At

At a quarter after nine, having received no answer from the Cossacks, I ordered four fires to be lighted, at the distance of three fathoms from each angle of the church. At half an hour after nine, I received intelligence that a number of handkerchiefs were seen fastened to piquets on the mountain, with which signals were made. At three quarters after nine, about fifty men were seen running with all their force towards the fortrefs, but without arms, which led me to think that the Cossacks had determined to surrender. At eleven minutes after ten, two Cossacks appeared before me, almost breathless, who told me that they had been dispatched to inform me that my first proposition was accepted, and that, in the course of half an hour, the whole troop would present themselves unarmed; for which reason they begged me to proceed no further until they could arrive.

A moment afterwards Sibeaw likewise arrived, and declared that on the first reading of his letter, they had determined to march strait to the church to deliver their families, but on being informed by the women that the combustible matters were piled together, and the fire at hand, so that their resolution would only hasten the destruction of so many innocent creatures, they entered into a debate, which could end only in the imprisonment of the hettman, whom they were bringing to me. At a quarter past eleven, the troops at last arrived, and as I had given my orders to Mr. Panow, he caused those to enter into the fort whom I had determined on as hostages, and sent the others to the church to bring their wives into the town. At the same time he took the precaution to send a detachment to the mountain, for the purpose of guarding the arms until they should be removed into the fort. Every thing being thus in a state of tranquillity, I caused the

the casemate to be opened, out of which came forty-two soldiers and the chancellor, whom I sent to accompany the hettman. The number of our hostages amounted to fifty-two persons, all principal men of the place, whose lives were to answer for the behaviour of the people.

C H A P. XXIX.

Transactions from the time of the receiving of hostages from the military of the province, to the final embarkation of the Count and his party in the St. Peter and St. Paul.

AT noon Mr. Panow made a review of our associates, and reported that Mr. Meder was not present. Search was made among the dead, but he was not found, and we were very uneasy concerning his fate, until Mr. Crustiew assured us that he believed he was securely hidden at home, and that if I pleased to send he had no doubt but he would be found in the oven. Mr. Panow immediately sent four armed companions, who returned with him, but before he was brought in, Mr. Crustiew informed me that Mr. Meder had been found on his knees, and that on their entrance he cried out he was innocent, and knew nothing of the plot. This recital made us laugh, but I was greatly surprized when I heard that Mr. Meder still believed that he was in the hands of government. For the more perfect assurance of this, I sent for him. At his first appearance he threw himself on the ground, and repeated his oaths that he knew nothing of the plot. I caused him to be lifted up, but this did not prevent his taking

taking me for the governor, and continuing his delirium. It was not till after I had shaken hands with him, and given him a glass of brandy, that he came to himself, and freely related, that at the first firing he withdrew into his house, and prayed to God for our preservation, and that about day-break, having heard the Cossacks knock at the door, he fainted away, and when he came to himself he was convinced of our destruction; an idea which had deprived him of his presence of mind.

After taking a little refreshment, I gave my orders to each of the chiefs. Mr. Crustiew was charged to go down the river to seize the corvette St. Peter and St. Paul, with the assistance of Mr. Kuzneczow and his party, and to burn all the other ships or barks. Mr. Baturin was ordered to examine the magazine and the treasury, to make an inventory of their contents. Mr. Panow undertook to superintend the funeral of the late governor, and the burial of the dead. Mr. Wynbladth had the care of the military services; and for my own part, as my wound became exceedingly painful, I was incapable of performing any duty; but I placed all my hope in the skill of Mr. Meder; for Mr. Lapin's knowledge extended no further than to the treatment of wounds.

In the evening I entreated Madame Nilow to permit me to see her, but she refused. In the night Miss Aphanasia came to see me, and after expressing her grief for my sufferings, she informed me that Madame Nilow intending to depart in two days, it would be necessary to carry her off as soon as possible. I dissipated the apprehensions of this amiable young lady, and afterwards had a light sleep.

On the 28th, every preparation being ready for the funeral, I gave orders to acquaint Madame Nilow that the ceremony waited for her orders. She determined that it should be performed without delay.

delay. The whole town was therefore obliged to repair to the church; and the burial was made with the greatest pomp. Twenty-one guns were fired from the fortress. After this ceremony I ordered Mr. Panow to persuade the archbishop, either by threatenings or promises, to preach a sermon in the church in favour of the revolution we had produced, and afterwards to receive the oath of fidelity, from all my companions towards me, upon the gospels at the altar, and that after all this ceremony he should carry away the miraculous image of St. Nicholas, in order that the liturgy might be duly performed on board. This proceeding appeared to me to be useful, as by means of their religious superstition, I might have the greater power over the minds of such as were governed by the prejudices of their faith. I passed this day under a fever, and was informed in the evening, that every thing had been conducted in the best possible order. Towards midnight the fever returned, and I had only time to instruct Mr. Panow of my intention to carry off Miss Nilow, and to give him my reasons for so doing.

May the 2d. During the three foregoing days I was delirious, in which time I was bled three times, and Mr. Panow did not think proper to interrupt me; but at three in the afternoon Mr. Meder affirming that I was out of danger, he informed me that Mr. Crustiew had taken possession of the corvette, and that the inventories of the contents of the magazines were made; the people being at present busied in collecting provisions for our voyage. And last of all he informed me, that Madame Nilow was gone, and that the instant before her departure she came to see me, and wept bitterly, without speaking a word. I then asked what was become of her daughter, and he replied, that the evening before the departure of her mother, he had caused her to
come

come out of the window without the least knowledge of her sisters, who, at their awaking, made a disturbance. But that their mother having hastened their departure, shewed great signs of resentment against her daughter who had escaped; by which means her other sisters were persuaded that the disappearance of their youngest sister was voluntary. He informed me, that since their departure Miss Aphanasia had not quitted my bed-side until this day, after Mr. Meder had assured her that I was out of danger, and persuaded her to take some rest.

In the evening, finding myself somewhat better, I admitted the officers of my party and my associates, to whom I expressed my strong sense of their behaviour. This day I ordered rafts to be made, to carry our artillery and ammunition on board the vessel, and on this same day likewise eighteen volunteers offered themselves to follow my fortunes, among whom was Ismailow, the nephew of the chancellor. This man had contrived sufferings for the secretary of the chancery, Mr. Szudeikin, by charging him with all the mischief he had himself intended doing to the company; and during the night, he insinuated himself so well into the good opinion of my companions, that he obtained not only his pardon from them, but likewise their assistance to revenge himself on Szudeikin for several different proceedings.

This rascal conducted them to the house of Szudeikin, who certainly had made no attempts to injure us, where they dragged him out of bed, beat him severely, and after pillaging his house, left him half dead.

On the 3d of May, after I had received an account from Mr. Panow of the conduct of Ismailow, I caused him to be put in irons. On the same day I had the archives of the chancery packed up, to carry them with me. The great quantity of furs which

which my officers found in the magazines, made me perfectly easy, as to the means of providing for the subsistence of all my companions on my arrival in Europe. I therefore began to enjoy some calmness, when at ten o'clock Miss Aphanasia came to me. She at first used every effort to conceal her sorrow and tears, but they at last overcame her attempts, and, as she was oppressed by extreme grief, I had not much difficulty in obtaining a knowledge of what afflicted her. The information she had received gave me great uneasiness at first; but at last she inspired me with that respect which a noble confidence produces in all the affairs of life. This amiable young lady put a letter into my hands, and simply said, I know all, forgive the first emotions of grief; I am prepared, and you have no future weakness to fear. Surprized at the resolute tone with which she pronounced these words, I opened the letter: it was written by Stephanow, who informed Miss Aphanasia, that after having been deceived and betrayed by me, she owed the most eminent vengeance to herself and family; to effect which he offered his services. He informed her that I was married, and consequently incapable of placing her in any estimable rank of life. He represented, that after this information, as she could never become my wife, she could not without dishonour follow my party: and he finished his letter by declaring, that he would efface her shame by my blood; for which purpose he waited only the re-establishment of his health, in order to offer his hand.

This letter, at any other time, would have inspired me with pity for an unhappy man, who was rushing hastily to his destruction; but at that moment it affected me strongly. For I had proposed to defer my confession until I could procure a proper match for the young lady. In this state of as-

nishment she roused me out of my reverie, by saying, "Listen, my dear friend, do not afflict yourself: your Aphanasia will not be unhappy. She loves you, and will always love you. She cannot call herself your wife, but you may keep her as your child." Immediately after which she said, "Shall it not be so, my dear papa." This ingenuity and freedom of character, united to the heroic sentiments of so amiable a person, went to my heart, and I could not avoid paying the tribute to such elevated sentiments. I begged her pardon for having concealed my situation from her, and pleaded, in my justification, that I was actuated by a regard for my family, and connected with a company whose members had exposed their lives to preserve mine; and, with a view to interest her still more, and obtain her indulgence, I likewise urged, as an excuse, the sentiments that I entertained for her. My words, though very ill calculated for my justification, were received with such interest as secured my pardon, which she pronounced by declaring, that nothing in the world could destroy her attachment for me. She added, that she would be contented to live in the country where I should fix my abode, and should enjoy perfect happiness in seeing me, and calling me father. Her hopes, she said, were to enjoy perfect repose in the bosom of my family, as she was resolved to renounce marriage intirely; and the only promise she requested of me was, to consider her as my own daughter, and permit her to change her cloathing, with a view that, when cloathed as a man, she might be less embarrassing to me.

Mr. Panow interrupted our conversation. This faithful friend being informed of what had passed, desired leave to go and destroy his relation; but soon after, hearing the resolution of Miss Aphanasia, he

he threw himself at her feet, to render homage to her courage. She at last retired with that tranquillity of mind which can only result from a resolution firmly taken. After her departure Mr. Panow informed me, that he had heard the day before, that Miss Aphanasia had discovered my marriage, though he had not been able to discover the name of the person who had betrayed me. He begged me to permit him to abandon his relation to justice, in order to deliver society from a monster, who, by his intrigues and wickedness, might hereafter lead the whole company to destruction. It was not without great difficulty that I could dissuade him from his intentions, but at last I succeeded. At this instant Mr. Baturin arrived, who informed me he had been present at a scene with Mr. Stephanow, where Miss Aphanasia having come in, made the bitterest reproaches for his want of attachment and fidelity to me. She declared that she despised his character and his person; that she had never looked upon him in any other light than as a monster of impiety and ingratitude; that he was basely mistaken to think that she had ever wished to become my wife, as she knew my situation from myself: and that her determination to attach herself to me was as a friend and daughter. She finished her discourse by advising Stephanow to enter into his own breast, to dismiss every idea of love towards her, and alter his behaviour in future. Stephanow, irritated at this discourse, became furious, and took up one of the pistols which lay beside his bed; but Baturin disarmed him, and caused him to be immediately conducted into a separate house, where he was at that time, guarded by two of the associates.

This day I distributed among my associates all the money of the imperial chest, and a quantity

of silk, fatten, and taffaties. I likewise received a letter from Mr. Crustiew, who pressed me to hasten to the port, in order to restrain the associates, who had behaved improperly to the natives.

May the 4th. This day a council was held to judge Mr. Stephanow, and sentence was passed that he should be excluded, in every respect, from their meetings, and from all command among the associates. Just before the breaking up of the committee, Miss Apbanasia presented herself in the dress, and with the arms of a man, and the company named her Achilles. Her figure in this dress was charming, and she certainly had as much courage as it is possible for a woman to have. About noon the rafts being ready, I sent twenty-five of the associates to the sea side, with thirty-three hostages under their care, the charge of whom was embarrassing to me in the town. I likewise sent one hundred and forty-six sledges by land, loaded with forces, to be embarked on board the corvette.

On the 5th of May, 1771, I ordered the priest to celebrate solemn divine service, and at the reading of the gospel I caused all the associates who were present to enter into an oath of fidelity towards me. At the end of this service I gave an entertainment at the fort, at which several of the inhabitants were present. At half past seven o'clock I gave orders for our departure on the 6th of May.

On the 6th, after having nominated persons to the administration, and caused the inhabitants to make oath that they would do nothing without the consent of me or my companions, during the whole time we should continue at Kamchatka, I effected my departure, and the business was transacted to the great contentment of both parties, though from different causes. At eleven o'clock in the evening, I arrived at Tsekawka, where I was

was received with enthusiasm by my companions and by Mr. Csuri, commander of the corvette, who assured me that the vessel would be ready to sail on the 11th of May.

On the 7th, after visiting the works, I was satisfied with the assiduity of my companions. My satisfaction was still greater to see one hundred and eighty Cossacks at work, whom they had forced to assist them. This day Mr. Crustiew warned me that the Kamchadal taton of Kawka had entered into an oath with a lieutenant of the garrison, who had escaped, and had promised to assassinate me, at the same time that he informed me that the taton was come, and requested permission to speak to me. I gave immediate orders to seize him, and bring him before me, where he denied the accusation, though he admitted that the lieutenant had made the proposal to him. A pistol found on this emissary aggravated his case, and convinced me of the propriety of administering to him fifty strokes of a bludgeon. He had scarcely received twelve before he confessed his crime, and declared that the lieutenant was then with the taton of a neighbouring village, together with Mr. Gurgiew, brother in law to Mr. Crustiew, who was strongly attached to the late government. Upon this deposition, I sent Mr. Kuzneczow, with six associates, to seize the criminals, whom they brought back at five o'clock. Their sentence, and its execution, was deferred till the following day. On this day I received a request from more than thirty women and girls, who were desirous of following the fortune of their friends, but as it was impossible for us to take so large a number of people on board, three only were accepted, and the others were refused, with the promise, that on our arrival at the first island, we would send the vessel for them.

On the 8th, in the morning, the company condemned Mr. Gurgiew the exile, and Mr. Valnoy
the

the lieutenant, to receive fifty strokes of the knowt, and the tajon double the number. This was instantly executed, and Messrs. Gurgiew and Valnoy were sent to the town to be cured.

On this day fourteen exiles arrived from different places, and begged me to receive them into our society, which was agreed to. At six o'clock the vessel, having undergone a complete repair, was rigged and twenty-two bears were this day salted as part of our sea stock.

On the 9th and 10th the company were busied in loading the vessel. On the 11th, all being ready for departure, I delivered the hostages, and sent them back to the town, except Mr. Szudeikin, secretary of the chancery, whom the company forced to embark, to serve them in quality of cook, for which they gave us as a reason, that it was necessary he should do penance for the mischiefs he had occasioned to the society at Kamchatka. On my arrival on board, I hoisted the colours of the confederation of Poland, which ceremony was attended with the discharge of twenty guns,

CHAP.

C H A P. XXX.

A short extract of voyages made to the eastward of Kamchatka.

AS a supplement I shall give a short extract of the different voyages undertaken to the eastward of Kamchatka, the manuscripts of which I found in the chancery.

In the year 1728, Captain Beering in company with Captain Tschirikow, made an expedition to discover the continent of America; but they went no further than cape Naninskoy, which the Russians supposed to be cape Tschukotskoy. This first expedition not having answered the intentions of the court of Russia, Mr. Kreniczin made another in the year 1729, which was not attended with any greater advantage. The third expedition, undertaken by these two captains in the year 1741, was more successful. They visited the coast of America, and some islands. Captain Beering, on his return, was shipwrecked on an island near Kamchatka, on which he died, and the crew, in honour of their captain, named the island after him. Captain Tschirikow received his crew on board, and returned to Kamchatka in the year 1742. His relation satisfied the minds of the Russians, and especially the traders, who hastened to fit out vessels in quest of the riches of these new islands.

The second expedition was that of two associates, Busso and Srebernïkow, who went no further than Beering's and the copper island. This voyage was undertaken the 22d of May, 1745, and they returned in 1746.

The

The third expedition was that of Nevodschikow, likewise, in the year 1745, in the galliot Eudochia, in which he sailed to the Aleuthes islands, nearest to Kamchatka. The great number of beavers he took afforded him a sufficient booty, and induced him to return, after having left traces of unexampl'd cruelty behind him. He carried off with him several young people of the natives; but no more than one lived to arrive at Kamchatka.

The fourth was performed in the year 1747 by two vessels, fitted out by and belonging to Mr. Cholodilow, a merchant. One of these vessels anchored at Beering's isle, and after hunting on this island, returned to Kamchatka. Her companion directed her course towards the east, and, after visiting several islands, brought back a very rich cargo of beavers and foxes skins.

The fifth was performed in the year 1750 by a company under an exclusive privilege. No great progress was made in this expedition; for the first islands having sufficed to load the four ships, they returned to Kamchatka.

The sixth expedition was that of Nikiphor Trapeznikow, in the year 1750. The government sent on board his vessel a military officer, with twenty-five Cossacks; they visited several of the Aleuthes islands, and on their return they falsely reported that they had subjected these islands to the power of Russia. For in the year 1752 the governor of Kamchatka, having sent a sottnik with some Cossacks, to receive the tribute, they were all cut off. The return of Trapeznikow greatly increased the rage for fitting out vessels, his single vessel having brought back a cargo worth one hundred and forty-two thousand roubles.

The seventh voyage was undertaken by the same Trapeznikow, in the year 1754, on board the brigantine

gantine St. Nicholas. This voyage produced the discovery of the island Atak.

The eighth was made by Srebernikow, who first discovered the islands of Foxes. He went as far as 29 deg. of longitude from Bolsha.

The ninth was undertaken by Tolsty, in the year 1756, who proceeded as far as Ulanaxa, and returned with a cargo valued at two hundred thousand roubles.

The tenth enterprize was made by Stadeneczow, in the year 1757, who ran aground on the island of Urumusir, where most of the people on board were cut off.

The eleventh was undertaken by Trapeznikow, who departed from Kamchatka in the year 1758, and after having visited several islands, came at last to Urumusir, where he was repeatedly attacked by the natives, who slew twenty-six of his people.

The twelfth was undertaken by Boscarew in the year 1760, who went as far as the island Alaxa, which is very near the continent of America. Most of his crew were cut off by the natives of that place.

The thirteenth expedition was made in the year 1762, at the expence of an association, who fitted out and armed five vessels, with the intention of examining the commerce, hunting, and fishery of the Aleuthes islands, where they were to form a colony; but the ignorance of the commanders of these vessels caused the loss of four, and the fifth returned, after three years absence. The murders and robberies perpetrated by this armament on the inhabitants are incredible.

The fourteenth was undertaken by Soloniow, in the year 1764. This vessel moored on the coast of the main land of America, which the commander mistaking for the island of Unalaksa, he had continual combats with the natives, and at last, after a
con-

considerable loss, was compelled to retire to a small island, on whose inhabitants he inhumanly revenged his loss. Two thirds of his people died of the scurvy before his return to Kamchatka.

The fifteenth voyage was made by Oczederin, in the year 1765. This navigator confined his views to fishing and the chase in the small islands, and did not venture to approach the coast of Unalakfa.

The sixteenth expedition was made by Captain Peter Kreniczin, who quitted Kamchatka in the year 1768, and instead of endeavouring to carry his discoveries as far as the continent, he remained two whole years on a small island, from which he sent his armed sailors, his canoes, and shallop, to hunt and fish, and to trade with the natives; so that government received no other benefit than that of paying out the charges of the expedition. Captain Kreniczin likewise derived no advantage from his voyage; for he was drowned in the river of Kamchatka, by his crew, on his return in the year 1770. Mr. Levaschiff, therefore, was the only gainer, for he had all the profit without receiving any blame, as he, in quality of subordinate to Mr. Kreniczin, was not responsible for the behaviour of his commander.

The seventeenth expedition was that of the corvette St. Peter and St. Paul, in which I had the good fortune to quit Kamchatka on the 12th of May, 1771, and arrived at Macao on the 22d of September in the same year.

C H A P. XXXI.

Minutes drawn up, for the purpose of forming a Chart, together with details respecting Siberia, and the sea coast of Kamchatka; and a description of the Kurelles and Aleuthes Islands.

A WISH to profit by the leisure time I enjoyed, and to divert disagreeable reflections, led me to form this chart, and to add such information as I could obtain respecting the eastern parts of the northern continent, in order that they might serve for the instruction and assistance of enterprising navigators.*

A description of the town of Jakutzk, the remotest town in Siberia, situated in northern Tartary. This town lies† in the sixty-third degree of north latitude, at the distance of one hundred and twenty-five French leagues from Ochocz, a town and port on the eastern coast of the frontier. Jakutzk is subject to the government of Irkucz, and is under the command of a voivode. In the year 1764 it was reckoned that forty thousand souls were subject to the government of this town, including the whole nation of the Jakutt Tartars, a wandering people, who occupy the immense deserts which form this province. The town is inhabited by exiles and Cossacks, who are always armed in readiness to

* The chart here mentioned has not come to the hands of the editor: it is therefore supposed that the Count took it with him in his last expedition, where, in all probability, it was lost.

† In lat. 62 deg. 1 min. 50 sec. N. and long. 147 deg. E. from Ferro; both determined by observation. See Coxe's Russian Discoveries, page 387.

keep the Jakutt chiefs in dependence. On the banks of the river Lena stands a fortress built in wood; the garrison of which consists of one hundred and fifty soldiers. Several rich merchants are settled in this town, who carry on the fur trade. All the caravans that pass from Russia to Ochoczk or Kamchatka are obliged to winter in this town, on account of the great quantity of snow and the excessive cold, which prevents them from going forward during the whole winter, which lasts full eight months.

In the year 1770, a considerable quantity of cannon, anchors, cables, and other marine stores, arrived in this town destined for the port of Ochoczk, where it was intended to establish a more considerable sea force; but the impossibility of drawing these heavy articles by dogs, obliged government to give up the project. I found one hundred and twenty-five officers exiled in this province, who, since the reign of the present Empress, have been banished into this barbarous country. The communication between this town and Ochoczk is kept up by the Jakutts, who are obliged annually, in the month of June, to provide six thousand horses. The caravan employs three months on the road from here to Ochoczk, and the horses pass no further than Judoma; from whence dogs and sledges are made use of to carry their merchandize to Ochoczk.

When I came myself along this road, on which I was detained ninety-five days, I saw no more than eighty horses, with which we were supplied, and all these, except seventeen, died on the road. It is impossible for government to remedy this inconvenience, which, in process of time, must cut off all communication by land with Ochoczk. The prospect of this event has engaged the Russian government to make preparations for securing the navigation.

navigation of the river Amour, which falls into the sea to the southward of the island Sachalin, and runs through the southern parts of Siberia.

The town of Uda is situated on the banks of a river of the same name in 55 deg. 24 min. N. lat. and 341 deg. 30 min. long. from Kamchatka. This small town is inhabited by one hundred families of exiles, who have thrown off their subjection to the Russian government, and established regulations among themselves. The inhabitants of this town have opened a trade with Korea, and can live without the assistance of Russia. Instead of oxen and cows, this new colony maintains a flock of elks, the flesh of which is good; the females afford a considerable quantity of milk, which they make into butter and cheese. I have eaten of both at Jakutzk. This province affords the most beautiful fables, and rivals the commerce of Russia, to the no small prejudice of the latter.

In the year 1770, the government of Ochoczk detached a serjeant, named Lohner, with twenty-four soldiers and eighty Cossacks, to reduce the town of Uda; but this troop, instead of executing the orders intrusted to them, deserted, and fixed their abode in Korea.

The river Uda would be navigable, if its entrance were not stopped by quicksands. From Uda to Ochoczk the coast runs N. E. and may be sailed along with safety every where, at the distance of three leagues; the depth of water being from fourteen to fifteen fathoms. The whole extent of this coast is inhabited by the Tungusi, who subsist on their flocks of elks, and the whales, which sometimes get aground. It has been observed that the current sets from N. to S. on this coast the whole year round, and the tide rises six feet four inches.

The

The port of Ochocz* in the lat. of 59 deg. 19 min. N. and 348 deg. 10 min. long from the meridian of Kamchatka, is formed by a river of the same name. The entrance of this harbour is due north. The town is built on the banks of the river, and a pretended fortress commands the harbour. The exiles are employed in sea affairs, and there is no year which is not signalized by some revolt. This disposition, which is maintained by despair, will open the entrance of Siberia to the first comer, and I can confidently affirm, that the arrival of the first foreign vessel will produce a revolution in Siberia; for from Ochocz* to Tobolczk there are at least one hundred and sixty thousand exiles, or their descendants, all bearing arms. The different hords of Tartars would join the common cause to overthrow the Russian dominion. This event cannot be far distant, and Russia will find herself, by a stroke of this nature, deprived of all that support which alone enables her to play a principal part in Europe, by virtue of the considerable augmentation of her revenue.

Several vessels are dispatched yearly from this port: one to Idziga; one to Tigil; three to Kamchatka, and eight or ten to the Aleuthes islands. The cargoes of these vessels consist in tobacco, a small quantity of flour, brandy, gunpowder, and some toys. On their return they bring back the skins of fables, martins, beavers, foxes, roptomaks, bears, ermins, elks and copper, which they have for some years past brought from Beerings isle. The Russians have hitherto carried on this trade without interruption; but since the desertion of several exiles, who have fixed their abode in the Aleuthes islands, and entered into alliance with the savages, several vessels have been taken, and three crews

* Lies in 59 deg. 22 min. N. lat. and 160 deg. 7. min. E. long. from Ferro, both by observation. See Coxe's Russian Discoveries, page 387.

cut off. Several others likewise have surrendered their vessels, and have established themselves in these islands, instead of returning to Siberia. The spirit of desertion being thus excited among the common people, vessels are no longer fitted out but with apprehension; and the parties concerned petition government to put troops on board each vessel, to keep their crews in subjection. But who can answer for the ideas of the soldiers: they likewise are men, and the love of liberty may have its influence on them as well as on others.

Russia is indebted, for the peaceable possession of this trade, only to the distance and the secrecy it preserves respecting its advantages, and the indolence of the other states of Europe, which have not made sufficient enquiries into the sources of the power of this vast monarchy. The immensity and extent of its possessions appear incredible to them, and prevent them from adopting the opinion, that, with the slightest sacrifice and exertions, its force may be overthrown, and destroyed at pleasure.

The province of Ochoczk is in all respects the most disagreeable spot on the face of the earth; covered with perpetual snow and ice, it produces neither vegetable food, nor even pasture for cattle: all the subsistence which is found there consists in fish and rein deer. These last animals are fed with moss, which grows on the rocks. In the province of Ochoczk grows cedar wood of prodigious thickness and height, very proper for shipping; the coast from Ochoczk to Taoui runs from E. to E. N. E; and at the distance of three leagues off shore the depth of water is from fourteen to fifteen fathom sandy ground. The current sets from north to the east-ward.

Taoui is a small town and fortress, built on the banks of a river of the same name, in which resides a hettman of Cossacks, with twenty exiled families, to keep the Cossacks in dependence. It is situated

in

in 60 deg. 15 min. N. lat. and 353 deg. 50 min. long. from the meridian of Kamchatka. The river of Taoui forms a harbour of small depth, and the communication between Taoui and Ochoczka by sea, is carried on by the boats called Bajdara.

Idziga is a town and fortress, built on the banks of the river of the same name, in which resides a voivode, with a garrison of one hundred soldiers, three or four hundred Cossacks, and about two hundred families of exiles. This town reckons six thousand tributary Cossacks, who are continually at war with the people of Csuckfi. It is situated in the 63d degree of north latitude, and 4 deg. 20 min. E. long from Bolska.

Cape Pensina lies in 62 deg. 28 min. N. lat. and 4 deg. 28 min. long. from Bolska. This cape divides the gulph of Pensina into two arms; the northernmost receives the river of Pensina, on the banks of which stands the town and fortress of Anadir.

The river Pensina is situated in 63 deg. 30 min. N. lat. and 8 deg. 15 min. long. from Bolska. The entrance of the river is hardly practicable, on account of the sunken rocks and ice which continually float in it.

The town and fortress of Tigille is situated on the banks of the river of the same name, which forms a very beautiful harbour, though shallow, in which small vessels only can enter. The entrance of this harbour lies in 58 deg. 42 min. N. lat. and 2 deg. 50 min. long. from Bolska. The town is commanded by a voivode, and the garrison is composed of eighty soldiers, one hundred Cossacks, and two hundred exiles. The Csuckfi often insult the outer gates, and kill travellers. The limits of the province of Kamchatka are established at two verstes, to the southward of this town. I shall proceed to give a more ample account of this province.

C H A P.

C H A P. XXXII.

A Description of Kamchatka.

KAMCHATKA is a considerable peninsula, extending to 58 deg. 41 min. N. lat. and terminated to the southward by a cape situated in 51 deg. 15 min. N. lat. Its form on the map resembles a dog's tongue. Many rivers abounding with fish run through this peninsula, but none of them are navigable, excepting the river of Kamchatka and the river of Bolscha. The river of Kamchatka is named Santal by the natives. It falls into the sea on the eastern coast of the peninsula in 56 deg. 15 min. N. lat. and its course before it falls into the sea is from N. to S. On the banks of this river is built a town called Nisney Ostrogg, commanded by a lieutenant immediately dependant on the governor of Kamchatka, who resides in the town of Bolscha, the capital of the province.

The town of Nisney Ostrogg is composed of three hundred houses, inhabited by a mixture of Cossacks and exiles, with a small proportion of natives: the town has two churches where divine service is performed by a protopope and six other priests. The district subjected to this town contains about three thousand Kamchadales, who are constantly employed in the chase and fishing.

The second town of this peninsula is Bolshe-reczkoy Ostrogg, which, as I have observed, is the capital. It is composed of five hundred houses regularly built, which form one single street inhabited by Cossacks. It is situated in 53 deg. 30 min. N. lat. and takes its name from the river on whose

VOL. I.

S

banks

banks it stands. For the name Bolshoretzkoy denotes a great river, and Bolshoretzkoy Ostrogg is as much as to say, the town of a great river.

To the southward of the town, within cannon-shot, is built a fortress, tolerably regular, having a ditch, five bastions and twenty battering cannon. In this fortress the governor resides, with a garrison of two hundred and eighty soldiers under his command. At a small distance from the fortress stands the metropolitan church; which is a wooden edifice, at a distance from all other buildings. The place of the exiles is to the West of the town, near a wood, at the distance of half a league. It was in the vicinity of this town that my place of exile was appointed, and in which, by the special grace of her Majesty the reigning empress and autocratrix of all the Russias, a sufficient space of ground was to be assigned for the burial of my body. Happily however, the order of predestination did not agree with the orders of this sovereign power. For, after my arrival in a state of slavery at the end of the year 1770, I found myself master of the entire province, the town and fortress, in April 1771.

The town of Bolsha is five leagues distant to the eastward of the sea coast, and from the mouth of the river. In a strait direction from Bolsha, on the eastern coast of the peninsula, is situated the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, which has sufficient depth of water to receive the largest vessels, though its entrance is difficult.

This port is perfectly well adapted for building shipping; but, as there is no wood proper for that purpose to be found throughout all Kamchatka, it is reasonable to think that Russia will derive no advantage from this circumstance. To the northward of the peninsula is a volcano, which was in the strongest state of eruption during my stay. I visited it,

it, and, as I have already mentioned, narrowly escaped becoming the victim of my curiosity.

The ground of this peninsula exhibits one single tract of snow, interspersed with mountains, many of which throw out burning matter, and from which a number of mineral springs issue forth. No vegetable has thriven in this ungrateful climate; for every experiment hitherto made has tended to corroborate this assertion. The greatest advantage which Russia might derive from Kamchatka, besides its furs, would be to establish smelting works for iron and copper. Unfortunately, however, the cruelty with which the Russians have treated the natives has diminished the number. For, at the arrival of the Russians, their number was reckoned at seventy thousand, and during my stay it scarcely amounted to eleven thousand, a number which must in future be still more diminished by the oppression they suffer. They are forced to contribute annually a number of slaves for the service of the soldiers and Cossacks, and are besides compelled to the sea service. From the most authentic examination I am assured that the population of the whole peninsula, in the year 1771, consisted of

	364	Soldiers.
	29	Land officers.
	422	Russian hunters.
	1500	Cossacks and their officers.
	26	Civil officers.
	82	Russian merchants.
	700	Descendants of liberated exiles.
	1600	Exiles of different conditions.
	8000	Male Kamchadales.
2 or 3000		Female Kamchadales.
	40	Russian women.
	200	Women, descendants of the exiles.

15963 Total.

C H A P. XXXIII.

Remarks on the Coast of Kamchatka.

1. **O**N the eastern coast the depth of water is unfathomable, and a constant current sets from north to south.

2. On the western coast the depth of water is regular, being ten fathoms at the distance of one league from shore, twenty at the distance of two leagues, and so proceeding to one hundred fathom, beyond which distance no soundings have been taken. The current is from north to south.

The communication inland is continually kept up by sledges drawn by dogs: but the travellers are often buried in whirlwinds of snow. The coasting trade is carried on by Bajdou, which are the boats of the country made of planks sewn together with whalebone. The north-east coast of Kamchatka is inhabited by two nations, Cossacks and Csuckfies, enemies of the Russians.

The different capes of this continent are

Cape Illim, situated in 58 deg. 36 min. N. lat. and 5 deg. 45 min. long. from Bolska.

Cape Olata, 59 deg. 30 min. N. lat. and 11 deg. 0 min. long. from Bolska.

Cape Suatoi 62 deg. N. lat. and 22 deg. 9 min. long. from Bolska.

C H A P. XXXIV.

A Description of the Aleuthes Islands discovered to the eastward of Kamchatka.

AS all these islands which lie further north than 60 deg. N. lat. are uninhabited, I shall wave the description of them, and only insert them in my chart, though the Russians pretend that the Csukefies often land on these islands in their passage from one continent to the other. This assertion appears to me to be so much the better founded, as having myself seen both the capes at one time, I have no doubt but that these emigrations are continually made. The cape * of the western coast of America, lies in 63 deg. 15 min. N. lat. and 26 deg. long. from Bolsha. To the north-east of this cape lie two islands, which it is affirmed were formerly inhabited, but as they were found without inhabitants in the last expedition of captain Levascheff in the year 1768, I shall pass them without further notice, and proceed to more interesting details.

1. The island of Barou is situated in 59 deg. N. lat. and 23 deg. 13 min. long. from Bolsha. No wood grows on this island, but it abounds with beavers and sea wolves.

2. Ala Gifcha Homin, a cape of the continent of America, is situated in 58 deg. N. lat. and 25 deg. 33 min. long. from Bolsha. The coast from this cape runs to the north-west as far as 59 deg. 45 min. N. lat. The bottom is very irregular, and full of sand-banks and rocks.

* This must have been Clerke's island. See Cooke's last voyage, vol. iii. August 1, 1779.

3. The

3. The island of Kadick, situated in 54 deg. 30 min. N. lat. and 33 deg. 16 min. long. from Bolsba, is very well peopled, and abounds with beavers and foxes; it is full of sulphur, and the inhabitants have wrought iron, which they receive in exchange from the continent. * This island is but moderately wooded, and has a river, the entrance of which lies from north to south, and its depth between eight and ten feet. During the summer, a large quantity of wild geese and ducks come to this island, of which the inhabitants collect great store. Their navigation is performed in canoes made of skin. Nine other islands, all inhabited, are reckoned in the neighbourhood of the island Kadick, from which they lie to southward, and south-south-west. These islands are frequented by the armed vessels of the hunters from Ochoczka and Bolsba: but the account received by a vessel which returned from thence in 1769, and brought home several arrows with heads of silver, is entirely false, as it has been since discovered, that the commander of that expedition caused these silver heads to be made himself, with the view of obtaining a recompence from government. The truth is, that these islands abound with foxes and beavers, and that in the year 1770, on the 28th of October, a vessel returned, which had been fitted out by Arsenic Kuzneczow with nine thousand beaver skins, and three thousand foxes skins. It must be observed that the beavers of these islands are preferable to those of Canada, and that each of these beaver skins sell in China at the price of eighty, one hundred, or one hundred and twenty roubles, and for near twice that sum in Japan.

4. The Island of Foxes is situate in 53 deg. 45 min. N. lat. and 31 deg. 28 min. long. from Bolsba:

* *La Grande Terre*, America, I suppose, the natives of which may receive it by the progress of exchange from Hudson's Bay, and other parts of the eastern sides of that continent. T.

It abounds in foxes, and is well peopled. The inhabitants know how to work in iron and copper. They obtain the iron from the Russians, and the copper is the produce of their own country. This island has a very good harbour on the north-east side; but the inhabitants, who have received amongst them many Russian deserters, have made preparations for defending the landing. However, they are very willing to trade; and the Russians in this pacific way obtain, in return for brandy, glass ware and iron, immense quantities of furs.

At a small distance to the north-west lie four other islands, and three to the southward. These last are steep too, and are composed of a mass of rocks. The channel among them is very dangerous; its direction is south-east and north-west, but the sea is often so agitated, and the surf is so dangerous as to threaten the dismasting or upsetting of vessels which may venture through.

5. The island Armichud, situated in 53 deg. 6 min. north latitude, and 29 deg. 14 min. longitude from Bolsha, is likewise well peopled, and contains a regular town governed by a taton or chief. In the year 1768 the crew of an armed vessel of hunters having found a large quantity of marcasite and copper ore on this island, took those minerals for gold, and fixed their abode there, to amass a quantity of riches. Some misunderstanding occasioned a war between them and the natives, the event of which was unfortunate for the Russians. Since that time Mr. Ochotyn, an exile, who deserted from Kamchatka, fixed his abode in this island, and made himself their chief by having contracted alliances with the natives of the country.

6. The island of Urumusir is situated in 52 deg. 35 min. north latitude, and 28 deg. 15 min. longitude from Bolsha: It is very populous, and governed

verned by several tajons, who are all subject to a chief, whom I shall have more particular occasion to mention in my journal. Two other islands lie north-east of this island, and three others to the north-north-west.

7. The islands of Beavers are three islands called by the Russians Jassacznie-ostrova, or Tributary Islands. The largest lies in 58 deg. 0 min. north latitude, and 26 deg. 45 min. longitude, from Bolsba. This island has two good harbours; the first on the eastern coast, the entrance of which is south-east; the second the western coast, and its entrance north-north-west. The inhabitants have been numbered at six hundred, who pay one thousand beaver skins as a tribute to the Russians.

8. The isle of Cows is in 51 deg. 35 min. north latitude, and 24 deg. 45 min. longitude from Bolsba. This island was thus named from the great quantity of sea-cows which are here found. The flesh of this animal serves for provisions to all the vessels of the hunters. Their teeth are of great value in the commerce with China. There are many bays on the coasts of this island, but the water is shallow, and wood is scarce. Besides these islands there are likewise a great number of others whose situation cannot be determined, and are besides of little consequence; for which reason I shall only mention further,

9. Beering's Island, situated in 55 deg. 45 min. north latitude, and 8 deg. 30 min. longitude, from Bolsba. This island bears the name of the captain who first landed upon it, and ended his life here.

10. The Copper Island, situated in 54 deg. 45 min. N. lat. and 9 deg. 50 min. long. from Bolsba. This island is so denominated from the abundance of this* metal, which the vessels take in as ballast,

* Mostly in a metallic or malleable state. Coxe, page 206.

and unload it at Ochoczka, where I have seen large quantities heaped together, from which no advantage is derived. Having verified the situation of some of these islands myself, and being assured of their situation by different journals, I have set down nothing by guess; but the following discovery has hitherto remained unknown.

A captain of a vessel named Cusma Korostilow, who made a voyage and returned to Kamchatka, being attacked with the scurvy, begged me to make a chart from his journal, which he put into my hands, and concerning the truth of which I satisfied myself by enquiries of several persons who went the voyage with him.

11. The island of Cusma, in 48 deg. 45 min. N. lat. and 23 deg. long. from Bolsha, is very well peopled and wooded; the inhabitants are clothed in the Chinese manner, with cloth made of a plant resembling hemp. On the eastern side of this island is a mountain, from which Cusma and others of his people saw land at the distance of eight or nine leagues to the eastward.

12. The island of Pearls, in 47 deg. 32 min. N. lat. and 24 deg. 18 min. long. from Bolsha, is likewise well peopled, and the inhabitants live together in society. They are armed with iron instruments and bows. As several large sailing vessels were seen on the coast, it may be presumed, that there is a communication between this island and that of Cusma. Besides these two islands, the journal of Cusma mentions the discovery of a great country, composed of several islands, which, according to his estimate, lie under the 44th deg. of north latitude. He moored at one of these islands, which he imagined to be about fifty leagues round. His account induced me to seek for these islands, and I actually found them in the parallel of 46 deg. 12 min. N. lat.

lat. and 10 deg. 8 min. long. from Bolsha. Circumstances unfortunately prevented me from pursuing the discovery, so that I can do no more than wish better success to future navigators.

C H A P. XXXV.

A Description of the Kurelles Islands.

THESE islands are twenty-eight in number: their situation is between 51 deg. 30 min. and 45 deg. N. lat. The three most northerly depend on Kamchatka; but all the others are independent.

The present is the most exact and most positive description of these islands; for I have written nothing but what is real. The relation of captain Spanberg, and several others, which I found in the archives of Kamchatka, such as that of the Sieur Walton, lieutenant of a vessel, captain Irtischew, captain Chmitewskoi, lieutenant Sind. But the manuduction of the Sieur Cforni, who frequented these islands for twenty-five years past, and carried on an exclusive commerce, has afforded me every necessary information.*

1. Amphigonon or Alayd, in lat. 51 deg. 30 min. N. and 359 deg. 30 min. long. from Bolsha, is nothing but a rocky mountain surrounded with very dangerous reefs.

2. Sumesu, in 51 deg. 3 min. N. lat. and 30 min. long. from Bolsha. This island is likewise rocky: it has an harbour on its north side, in which small vessels may winter. Some beavers, and a quantity of the fish called Kofattka, are found here. Here is plenty of water, and in winter, the melting of the

* This paragraph is translated verbatim.

snow forms several rivulets. From the southern point of land we see the third island.

3. Poromufir, in 50 deg. 52 min. N. lat. and 15 min. long. from Bolscha: it is inaccessible on account of the rocks and sunken reefs which surround it: no wood grows here; the natives land in their boats of skin.

4. Cirinky, in N. lat. 50 deg. 7 min. and 10 min. long. from Bolscha. On the western coast of this island is a very spacious and commodious harbour, in which vessels may anchor at all seasons. This island is very thinly inhabited. Cedar and birch grow here, and there is no want of fish, beavers, and especially sea-wolves: several fresh springs are found in the southern part of this island.

5. Launath, in lat. 49 deg. 43 min. N. and long. 359 deg. 52 min. from Bolscha. This island runs from N. to S. being five leagues long and three broad. It is only occasionally inhabited by the Kurelles, who come from the more southerly islands for the purpose of catching beavers. Wood grows on this island, but it affords no water, and has no harbour.

6. Trinity, in 49 deg. 30 min. N. lat. and 359 deg. 21 min. long. from Bolscha, is merely a heap of rocks.

7. Galanth, in 49 deg. 26 min N. lat. and 23 min. long. from Bolscha. On the west side of this island is a very good harbour. It is well wooded, but water is scarce; there are abundance of beavers on this island, but it is not inhabited.

8. Collosse, in 49 deg. 9 min. N. lat. and 359 deg. 33 min. long. from Bolscha, is nothing more than a heap of rocks and sand-banks.

9. Rouge is a rock in 49 deg. 7 min. N. lat. and 20 min. long. from Bolscha.

10. Sommeil in 48 deg. 50 min. N. lat. and 359 deg. long. from Bolscha; it is well wooded and produces a quantity of poppies, the seed of which being

ing imprudently eaten by three persons, whom Cfornt had sent a hunting, threw them into a sleep, which terminated in death.

11. Volcan, in 48 deg. 40 min. N. lat. and 50 min. long. from Bolsha. The volcano was extinguished in the year 1767, after a great earthquake. The principal environs of the mountain are covered with pumice stones, together with large lumps of sulphur, and a quantity of very heavy metal, which has undergone fusion. This island is known by its black appearance.

12. Courbé, in 47 deg. 49 min. N. lat. and 37 min. long. from Bolsha, is nothing more than a heap of rocks.

13. Exile, in lat. 48 deg. 40 min. N. and long. 1 deg. 4 min. from Bolsha. In the year 1757 the Kamchadales found on this island five Kurelles, driven out of their own country, which caused them to give this name to the island. It has few inhabitants, and is little better than a mass of rocks.

14. L'Agneau, in 48 deg. 27 min. N. lat. and 359 deg. 17 min. long. from Bolsha, is very thinly peopled, but well wooded. The inhabitants of this island are very well acquainted with trade, and are always provided with the produce and manufactures of Japan, such as cloths, knives, &c. These islanders sometimes arrive at Kamchatka. On the south-west side of the island there is a small harbour.

14. Chien (Dog island) is situated in 48 deg. 22 min. N. lat. and 359 deg. 43 min. long. from Bolsha. It has neither harbour nor fresh water. In the year 1768, Cfornt took six thousand eight hundred-sea dogs in the space of four months, from which he gave it its name.

16. Vajvoda, in 47 deg. 30 min. N. lat. and 358 deg. 30 min. long. from Bolsha. This island was so called in honour of Vajvoda Demetri Nedozirow, who, in the year 1762, secretly sent a pilot with 12
soldiers

soldiers to this island, with a view to collect a large quantity of gold, which common report affirmed to abound in this place. But as no information had been received in the year 1769 concerning the expedition, Ivan Cforni visited it, and found no inhabitants. On the southern shore he found a cross with an inscription, from which he learned, that this detachment departed for the islands Jedzo. This island has no port, and produces no gold, but it abounds with beavers and sea-cows.

17. Ufigak, in 47 deg. 16 min. N. lat. and 1 deg. 13 min. long. from Bolska. On the south-west side of this island there is an excellent harbour, capable of receiving large vessels. The island is wooded all over, and well peopled by the Kurelles, who have built a small town. Ivan Cforni carried on a very advantageous trade at this place, and assured me, that he had at different times bargained with them for at least eighteen pounds of gold dust, with many pieces of gold from Japan and Jedzo. He shewed me these different kinds of gold. That of Jedzo differs from the Japanese gold by its very pale colour. Cforni was of opinion that the Japanese never come to this island, unless forced by strefs of weather.

18. Bouc, in 47 deg. 20 min. N. lat. and 359 deg. 53 min. long. from Bolska. This island was visited in the year 1740 by the first expedition. They found very fine pearls; but if there were no finer than those I have seen, they are not worth going for.

19. Chevre, in 46 deg. 50 min. N. lat. and 1 deg. 34 min. long. from Bolska. This island has few inhabitants and no harbour, neither does it possess any other advantage.

20. Marikan lies in 46 deg. 40 min. N. lat. and 359 deg. long. from Bolska. Its length is thirteen leagues from N. to S. and its breadth is six. On the

the south-east coast of this island is a very fine harbour. It is inhabited by bearded Kurelles, whom the Russians call Machnati. An ore of red copper, containing a large portion of gold, was found here in the year 1765. A vessel belonging to the company of a merchant, named Lapin, brought home more than one hundred quintals of this copper, but it was confiscated, on pretence that the permission of the governor extended no further than to the commerce of furs. The inhabitants of this island live together in society. They have cattle, hogs, poultry, &c. All these islanders are clothed in the Chinese manner; their skin is of a bronze colour, and their food is rice and beef.

21. Bereza lies in 45 deg. 35 min. north latitude, and 358 deg. 20 min. longitude from Bolsha. It is of a triangular form, and has an excellent harbour on its north side. It is very thinly peopled, and its inhabitants employ themselves in the fishery of beavers and other sea animals, particularly the whale, with the oil of which they carry on a very advantageous trade with the islands of Jedzo, receiving in return gold, cloth, iron, and different utensils. The inhabitants cultivate rice on this island. Six other islands lie to the west-north-west of this, but they are merely rocks.

22. Good Hope, in 45 deg. 0 min. north latitude, and 356 deg. 30 min. longitude from Bolsha: Its length is 30 leagues from north to south, and it has two fine harbours, one on the north-east, and the other on the south-west side. In the southern part of the island there are two towns regularly built. In the year 1764 some inhabitants of this island arrived at Kamchatka, to conclude a treaty with the Russians. The acts of the chancery mention that these envoys presented three small sacks of leather or skin (cuir) filled with gold, and a garment made of birds feathers. These envoys were

were put on board the ship Elizabeth, in order to go to Petersburg; but this ship foundered at sea. The island abounds in cattle, rice, and other vegetable productions. Ivan Cſorni intended to have fixed his residence in this island. He estimated its population at 4000 males, capable of bearing arms, which are a kind of sabre, a lance and a bow. Several Russian deserters live amongst them, and are greatly esteemed. The climate is very temperate, and the air wholesome. At the distance of two leagues to the westward of this island the depth of water is thirty-three fathom.

The foregoing is the true situation of the Kurelles islands, in which I do not comprehend the islands of Jedzo, as the Russians usually do. For these last mentioned islands are inhabited by a civilized people, who have an established government. I shall therefore speak of them separately, and shall shew that every thing which has been written concerning the pretended land or continent of Jdzo, company's land, &c. ought to be understood of these islands of Jedzo.

C H A P. XXXVI.

A Description of the Islands of Jedzo.

EVERY navigator, at a distance from these islands, would suppose them to be one continued tract of land. This circumstance has led the Hollanders into the greatest mistakes; and the missionaries of China have given us so many fabulous relations concerning them, that it is scarcely possible to draw any conclusion. As my enquiries concerning them produced information grounded upon real discoveries, I shall proceed to give a description of them.

1. Kawith Jdzon, in 45 deg. 5 min. north latitude, and 353 deg. 0 min. longitude from Boshu. This island is very populous, and has three very excellent harbours on its southern side. It is every where very well wooded, and in its southern part stands the town of Matza, which is built of wood. In this town resides a chief, subordinate to Kunaschir Jdzo, the sovereign of all the islands, who resides in the island Kunaschiran. The town consists of more than 2000 houses, and is defended by several small forts, constructed of wood, and surrounded by ditches. Silver and copper mines are wrought in this island, and here it is that the red pearls are fished, and are regularly, in the months of May and October, exchanged with the Japanese merchants, who arrive at those periods, for cloth, and other stuffs of silk, as well as for iron tools and arms.

The Japanese were formerly at war with the inhabitants of Jdzon, but, since the year 1762, peace

peace seems to be well established between them. These islanders have large barks, in which they sail to Korea, China, and Japan. In the year 1753, a Russian pilot, named Mastlow, who was shipwrecked on the Kurelles islands, was sold by the inhabitants to Kawith, and knew so well how to recommend himself to the favour of their chief, that he was promoted to the rank of Befales, or commander of the troops. This Mastlow, in the year 1768, wrote a letter to the governor of Kamchatka, in which he advised him to open a trade with this country. His letter came to hand by the way of the Kurelles, but the governor, being persuaded that it was a forged business of some of the Russian merchants, despised the invitation, and the cossack who brought the letter from the Kurelles was thrown into prison, and beat with the batogh as a reward for his zeal.

2. Cfulgan Jdzon is situated in 43 deg. 27 min. north latitude, and 352 deg. 58 min. longitude from Bolsha. This island is twenty leagues in length from east to west, and six leagues in breadth from north to south. Captain Spanneberg, in the year 1741, was in sight of this island, but did not approach it. It is equal in fertility to Kawith, and its name is derived from a word denoting copper, with which it abounds. For Cfulgu denotes copper. On the northern side of this island there is a town and harbour. The name of the town is Tchouppou Jdzon, which denotes the town of the Sun.

3. Maânas Jdzon lies in 44 deg. 0 min. north latitude, and 351 deg. 0 min. longitude from Bolsha. Its length from north-east to south-west is thirty-eight leagues, and its breadth is from twelve to seventeen leagues. In the year 1743, a pilot, named Novodzikow, who is still living at Kamchatka, landed on this island in a Bajdara. He informed me, that he had received, in exchange for

an old hat, two pieces of gold struck with a mark, which weighed together two ounces and a half. I verified this fact by consulting the registers of the chancery. The two pieces were sent to Petersburg. This Novodzikow was very civilly received, and dismissed by the inhabitants; but a short time afterwards Lieutenant Walton came to the island, with a double shallop, and some excesses, committed by his crew, occasioned them all to be cut off. There is likewise a very good harbour and town on the south-side of the island; this last is called Ouratilkiva Jdzon, or red town; it is well peopled, carries on a brisk trade, and is subject to Kunaschir.

4. Kunaschir Jdzon, called by the Russians Zelenoiostrow, or green island, is situated in 42 deg. 30 min. north latitude, and 350 deg. 35 min. longitude from Bolscha. It extends from north-east to south-west sixty-five leagues in length, and its breadth varies from twenty-eight to twelve leagues. On the northern part of the island is a very excellent harbour; into the bottom of which runs a fine river, though shallow. Several bays on the western coast afford a very good pearl fishery. The principal town on this island is called Kunashiran, in which the king of the country resides. There are several other towns of less magnitude on this island: Kunashir Matza, on the south-west side of the island; Kunashiraapi in the centre; and Kunashir Orgutt on the eastern coast. The relations of Spanneberg affirm, that he saw more than two hundred vessels or boats off the island.

In the year 1769 the court of Peterburgh sent to the islands Jedzo two young men, named Antippe Tartarino and Ottlasow, who had learned a few Japanese words at Irkuczk; but no news was heard of them during the whole time of my stay in these parts. The best founded notion that I could obtain of this island is, that it is regularly governed by a king; that strangers on their arrival
are

are obliged to establish themselves there by marriage, and are carefully watched. It is evident that their riches must be immense, and their force, consisting of armed men, considerable; since this island proved able to resist the emperor of Japan for a series of years.

5. Fiaffi Kamoni Idzon, or health of God, is situated in 41 deg. 10 min. north latitude, and 348 deg. 5 min. longitude from Boshu. This island is very populous, and its government is regularly administered, subject to Kunashir. Horses have been seen on this island. The inhabitants are always in arms on account of their differences with the Koreans, notwithstanding which the commerce between these two nations is carried on without interruption, through the medium of the island of Matzumay. There are two towns on this island, one to the south and the other to the west.

6. Matzumay is situated in 41 deg. 30 min. north latitude, and 347 deg. longitude from Boshu. Its length from north-east to south-west is forty leagues, and its breadth from east to west is twenty-seven leagues. This island has two good harbours; one on the north and the other on the south side. It is intersected by several fine rivers. The capital town is on the west part of the island, and likewise bears the name of Matzumay. This island has been conquered by the Japanese, who maintain a garrison of three thousand men here, besides which there are more than fourteen hundred Japanese exiles, condemned to the works. Most of the natives of the island retired to Kunashir after the conquest.

The Dutch company, in the year 1754, proposed to the Emperor of Japan to make a voyage to the northward of his country, under his good pleasure, and to conquer the islands of Jedzo: but the emperor was so far from accepting their propo-

sal, that he forbid the Hollanders to think of it, on pain of being excluded from their commerce.

The foregoing short detail contains all that can be said or written, consistently with truth, concerning the pretended land of Jedzo, or company's land.

C H A P. XXXVII.

*A Supplement to the Description of the Coast of Tartary
and the Island Saghalin.*

THE gulph of Uda, formed by cape Allangaddi, situated in 54 deg. 10 min. north latitude, and 345 deg. 15 min. longitude from Bolfha; and extending to the northward of the entrance of the river Amour, is filled with small islands which shut up its entrance.

The mouth of the river Amour lies in 52 deg. 50 min. north latitude, and 346 deg. 0 min. longitude from Bolfha. The Koreans call this river Saghalin, and its course extends near five hundred leagues into the country. It is capable of receiving vessels of the greatest burden. Its entrance is due south, in which are fifteen small islands forming a bay, which abounds in pearls. The southern part of this bay is Cape Vafitua, in 52 deg. 20 min. north latitude, and 347 deg. 5 min. longitude from Bolfha. The importance of this river to Russia is of the highest magnitude; for by means of one of its branches a communication may be had with Mandfchou, and by the second as far as Tefiou, situated on the gulph of Pekin.

Saghalin

Saghalin island lies to the eastward of the entrance of the river Amour: the center of the island is in 52 deg. 0 min. north latitude, and 349 deg. 0 min. longitude, from Bolsha. Its length from north to south is sixty-nine leagues, and its breadth from east to west from fifteen to twenty leagues. It is intersected by several rivers, and has excellent bays and harbours. In the year 1761 there were reckoned four small towns inhabited by the Gilakes, an independent people, who trade with the Russians and Koreans. This island produces the most beautiful furs, which are sables and foxes skins. The northern part is mountainous and wild, but the country to the southward is beautiful. To the northward of this island is another small island called the Glass Island, (du Verre) in 54 deg. 30 min. north latitude, and 350 deg. 0 min. longitude from Bolsha. It abounds with talc, but is a desert.

A

C O N T I N U A T I O N

OF THE

MEMOIRS of the COUNT DE BENYOWSKY:

Being a JOURNAL of his Voyage by Sea, from the
Peninsula of Kamchatka to Canton in China.

ON the 11th of May, 1771, I went on board the corvette St. Peter and St. Paul, in the port of Bofha, where I made the following distributions for the sea-service, and caused twenty ports to be cut in the side of the vessel for cannon, twelve of which were of wood.

Myself, Count de Benyowsky, Commander in Chief. Count Crustiew second,

Q U A R T E R S.

After Guard.

Mr. Panow,
Mr. Kuzneczow,
Mr. Zablikow,
Mr. Popow,
Mr. Loginow,
Mr. Cfurin,
Mr. Urbanowsky,
Mr. Contrathimaitre,
29 Hunters, fore-mast
men.

Forecastle.

Mr. Wynbladth,
Mr. Stephanow,
Mr. Meder,
Mr. Ismailow,
Mr. Boscarew,
Mr. Kostromin,
Mr. Gurcsinin,
Mr. Baturin,
28 Private men, serving
before the mast.

37 persons.

36 persons.

Total, 75 doing duty.

9 Women, and }
12 Passengers, } 21

On the whole, 96.

ARMAMENT

ARMAMENT of the CORVETTE.

- 96 Persons, including 9 women,
- 8 Pieces of cannon,
- 2 Howitzers,
- 2 Mortars for bombs,
- 120 Muskets with bayonets,
- 80 Sabres,
- 60 Pistols,
- 1,600 lb. of gunpowder,
- 200 lb. Weight of bullets,
- 800 lb. Salted flesh,
- 1,200 lb. Salted fish,
- 3,000 lb. Dried fish,
- 1,400 lb. Whale oil,
- 200 lb. Sugar,
- 500 lb. Tea,
- 4,000 lb. Damaged flour,
- 40 lb. Butter,
- 113 lb. Cheese,
- 6,000 lb. Different pieces of iron work,
- 120 Grenades,
- 900 Cannon ball,
- 50 lb. Sulphur,
- 200 lb. Saltpetre,
- 1,200 lb. — * (the word wanting in the manuscript.)
- 36 Butts of water,
- 126 Chests of furs,
- 14 Anchors, and sundry cordage, with change of sails,
- One shallop and one canoe.

The corvette drawing eight feet eleven inches and eight feet five inches of water.

At eleven in the forenoon I caused divine service to be celebrated, according to the rites of the Greek church. Te Deum was chaunted, and after-

* Most probably Charcoal.

wards the whole company renewed their oath of obedience to my orders: at five in the evening dropped down the river and moored at the entrance.

Thursday, the 12th of May, weighed anchor, and after setting the hostages at liberty, sailed out of the harbour on a southern course. A very light breeze from north-north-west.

The day being hazy, and almost calm, anchored on the bank: depth of water from three fathoms and a quarter to three and a half; coarse greenish sand. At four o'clock a breeze springing up, set sail, and passed between the two banks. The vessel stuck in a floating piece of ice, which we broke by firing a cannon against it. From the quarter-master's report, all well, six inches water in the hold, at two hours and a half. Latitude sailed from, 52 degrees, 32 minutes; longitude sailed from, 359 degrees, 0 minutes: latitude in, 51 degrees 34 minutes; longitude in, 358 degrees, 36 minutes from Bolsha; wind north-north-west; current from south to north; course south.

Friday, May the 13th, close cloudy weather, with a strong breeze from north-north-west, soundings from 16 to 24 fathom; fine greenish sand. A heavy sea from the north-west. We held on our course to the southward, in the evening reefed our top-sails. At day-break we discovered the rock Alayd to the westward. At nine A. M. a consultation was held respecting the course to be sailed. I proposed to moor near one of the Kurelles islands, to collect some provisions and bake bread; and the company declared their readiness to acquiesce in whatever I might judge proper.

According to the quarter-master's report, every one on board in good health. Latitude sailed from, 51 degrees, 34 minutes; longitude sailed from, 358 degrees, 36 minutes; latitude in, 50 degrees, 27 minutes;

minutes; longitude in, 359 degrees, 15 minutes, from Bolsha. Wind north-north-west; current from north to south; course south-south-east.

Saturday, May the 14th, among the Kurelles islands, close hazy weather, with snow, and a considerable irregular swell. Saw several whales pursued by the sword-fish. A very strong current observed from north to south; kept on a south-south-east course, having two islands in sight: that on the larboard bearing south-south-east, and on the starboard south-west one quarter south. The sight of these islands occasioned some disturbance; for several of the company requested me to come to an anchor; and as they thought proper to threaten me upon my not attending to their demand, I put two under confinement, and determined not to come to anchor at the Kurelles islands, for fear of some mutinous consequences. In the middle of the channel between these two islands our soundings were 23 fathom, fine sand, and greenish coral. About six in the evening the wind increased; shortened sail during the night, and at day-break discovered a bajdara or boat of the country, which made for the shore at sight of us. Many birds in sight, flying from south to north. Latitude sailed from, 50 degrees, 27 minutes north; longitude sailed from, 359 degrees, 13 minutes; latitude in, 50 degrees, 15 minutes; longitude in, 0 degrees, 30 minutes, from Bolsha. Wind west; current from north to south; course south-east, 19 degrees, 37 minutes.

Sunday, May the 15th, close foggy weather; a strong steady breeze, with a great swell of the sea in the evening; carried away the end of the main-yard. People employed making okum and small cordage. Observed some floating weed and some whales.

According to the quarter-master's report, the whole company in good health. One butt of water started.

started. Latitude failed from, 50 degrees, 15 minutes; longitude failed from, 0 degrees, 30 minutes; latitude in, 51 degrees 21 minutes; longitude in, 3 degrees, 54 minutes, from Bolsba. Wind west; current from south-west to north-east; course north-east, 57 degrees, 39 minutes.

Monday, May the 16th, close cloudy weather with much snow; variable winds. This day Ismailow was accused of having made a seditious proposal to the two Kamchadales; he was ordered into confinement upon bread and water.

According to the report, six men and one woman sick; latitude failed from, 51 degrees, 21 minutes; longitude failed from, 3 degrees 54 minutes; latitude in, 52 degrees 34 minutes; longitude in, 5 degrees, 30 minutes, from Bolsba. Wind west; current from south to north; course north-east one quarter north.

Tuesday, May the 17th, weather somewhat clear, with uncertain winds, the sun appearing at intervals. Towards evening rain and snow; took several cod-fish; saw whales swimming from south to north, with several flights of birds from east to west. In the night the wind freshened with a considerable swell of the sea.

According to the report, four persons sick; latitude failed from, 52 degrees, 34 minutes; longitude failed from, 5 degrees, 30 minutes; latitude in, 54 degrees 15 minutes north; longitude in, 6 degrees, 58 minutes, from Bolsba. Wind west one quarter north; current from south to north; course north-east.

Wednesday, May the 18th, close foggy weather, with snow and rain; great quantities of floating weed round the ship, of which we collected a quantity, to serve in case of necessity; saw several black eagles; employed this day in repairing the shallop and small boat, and cleaning our arms.

According

According to the report, four persons sick; latitude sailed from, 54 degrees, 15 minutes; longitude sailed from, 6 degrees 58 minutes; latitude in, 55 degrees 19 minutes north; longitude in, 7 deg. 54 minutes from Bolsha. Wind west; current from south-east to north-west; course north, one quarter east.

Thursday, May the 19th, the isle Beering in sight; hazy weather. By a good observation I determined the latitude of this island to be 55 degrees, 15 minutes north, and its longitude 8 degrees, 0 minutes, from Bolsha. I came to an anchor, at the distance of half a league from the western coast, in 28 fathom water, coarse sand and shells. As soon as we had brought to, I sent the small boat with Mr. Panow and ten armed associates, to examine the island, with orders, that when they had found a place of shelter, to let me know by three fires, and send the canoe immediately for me; but in case they found any vessel in the harbour or road, they were directed to come back without landing. After his departure I hove up the anchor, and suffered the vessel to drive towards the island. At the distance of a quarter of a league the wind slackened, and forced me to come to. We soon observed the signal, and approached a bay, in which I found a very good bottom at 50 fathom; the small boat having come back, was sent to take the soundings, after which we moored in 8 fathom water.

According to the report, two sick; latitude sailed from, 55 degrees, 19 minutes; longitude sailed from, 7 degrees, 54 minutes; latitude in, 55 degrees, 19 minutes north; longitude in, 8 degrees, 0 min. from Bolsha. Wind south and calm; current from south to north; course north and east.

Friday, May the 20th, at anchor in a bay on the coast of the island of Beering, the weather fine and calm. Although Mr. Panow had assured me that

that he found no person upon the island, I nevertheless sent a party to make discoveries, and sent another party on shore to construct a cabin and ovens, to bake our bread. Having determined to go on shore myself, I gave orders for cleaning the tiers, and airing our provisions; after which I embarked in the small boat with six of the associates, and made a sketch of the bay.

When I came on shore I had a tent set up, and about five in the evening the party who had been sent upon discovery, returned, and related, that at the distance of a league from the bay they had discovered a cabin in which they found a dog, and underneath a tub a letter, which they brought me. Mr. Kuzneczow, the commander of the party, assured me, that he had likewise found four barrels of whale oil in the cabin, with ten or twelve quintals of salted fish. He added, that, in his opinion, there were certainly people upon the island, because he had observed recent traces on the snow and a bath newly constructed. To clear up my doubts I read the letter, which is as follows:

“ Health to all those who may arrive on this
“ island. I inform them that the ship Elizabeth,
“ which left the port of Ochoczk in the year 1769,
“ under my command, remained at this island a
“ whole year, after having received much damage
“ by tempests. After this long stay, being assured
“ that all our attempts to put her into a situation
“ to carry us home were useless, we broke her
“ up, and built boats out of her materials, in
“ which I am about to proceed on a voyage towards
“ the island, which lies to the eastward, in hopes
“ of finding some vessel, in which myself and
“ crew may return. Written January 24, 1771.

“ IVAN OCHOTYN, Captain.

“ BALTASA BALAKIROW, Pilot.”

On

On the southern part of the island Mr. Kuznezow found likewise five crosses erected, one of which bore the following inscription:

“ To the honour of God and St. Nicholas, in the year 1769, on the 28th of April, this cross was erected by Peter Kreniczin, commander of the expedition sent for the discovery of California.”

This last discovery was not of any consequence, but the discovery of a species of turnips and very good garlick was extremely useful to us, as well as the provision of salted fish and whale oil. With respect to the letter, after mature examination, I was convinced that the writing was fresh: several reflections led me to recollect, that I had often heard speak of this Ochotyn, who was reported at Ochoczk to have become a pirate. To clear up my doubts, I enquired of my companions whether any of them knew Ochotyn, and several of them immediately informed me, that Ochotyn was not a Russian, and that having seized the ship he commanded, and persuaded his crew to follow his fortune, he had settled in the Aleuthes islands, where during the last two years he had taken other Russian ships, whose crews had placed themselves under his command: so that the number of Europeans under him must amount to more than one hundred, besides that a number of the islanders had nominated him their chief. Upon this information I concluded, that Ochotyn, or at least some of his party, were on the island; in consequence of which I chose five of our company, whom I sent out separately, well armed and supplied with provision, and likewise a letter of invitation addressed to Ochotyn or the people of his party: to prevent any unlucky mischance, I gave orders for a strict look out both on shore and on board.

According

According to the report, the whole company in good health.

Saturday, the 21st, at Beering's island, in the bay St. Maurice, so named by my companions; fine weather, and the snow melting. This day the flour was brought on shore, and we began to bake bread in five ovens we had built. My companions built me a commodious cabin. This day I dispatched twenty-two of the people to carry the salted fish and whale oil on board: six men were sent to cut wood, and the carpenter Nikita repaired the main yard. In the evening sent on board twenty-four barrels of fresh water, four cords of fire-wood, and part of the salted fish, with a cask of garlick, and a quantity of roots. The night passed without disturbance, but at five in the morning I was awakened by Mr. Crustiew, who informed me that he had heard several shots fired to the southward of the island. I immediately went out of my cabin, and heard several other successive reports; on which I gave immediate orders to beat an alarm, and was joined by twenty of the people from on board. To discover what had happened, as well as to assist those who had been dispatched the evening before, I gave orders to Mr. Wynbladth to embark with sixteen men in the shallop, and proceed to the southern point of the bay, in order to observe more easily from whence the noise might proceed. After having dispatched him, I left the command to Mr. Crustiew, and embarked in the small boat myself with eight of our people. We soon passed the shallop, and on our arrival at the south point I perceived a bajdara, which rowed towards us, with five people on board. On their approach we perceived they were Russians, and one of them halloed, and told us that he had a letter for the commander of the corvette St. Peter. They soon
came

came up with us, and gave me the letter, which I read, and proposed to them to come on board my vessel. They agreed to this, and declared that their general had ordered them to come on board, which they accordingly did at ten o'clock precisely.

On my arrival I found my people in the greatest confusion. Mr. Stephanow informed me that he had discovered a mutiny, by means of Alexi Andreanow. Upon examination I heard that Mr. Ismailow, with his friend Zablikow and fifteen others, had entered into an oath to seize the first opportunity, when the greatest part of the people should be on shore and myself on board, to secure my person, and afterwards return to Kamchatka; but, in case they could not carry this project into effect, that they should assassinate me, set fire to the vessel, and quit the island in the shallop. The deposition of Andreanow was confirmed by Popow and Rabalow. I therefore immediately armed those persons on whom I could place the most dependence, and afterwards mustered the whole company, to whom I exposed the authors of the plot. These were immediately put in irons, and carried on shore to be tried by a council which I nominated, and over which Mr. Crustiew was appointed to preside. After this business was finished, I directed my attention to shew every civility to the persons who brought Mr. Ochotyn's letter.

According to the report, one person sick and nineteen prisoners.

Sunday, May the 22d, in the bay of St. Maurice, at Beerings isle; weather squally, with rain; wind south-west. At three o'clock my adjutant presented to me a memorial in the name of the whole company, requesting that Mr. Ismailow and the Kamchadale Parenczin, with his wife, should be set on shore, and abandoned in the island, and that the others,

others, who had been seduced by them, should be punished with fifty lashes, and afterwards restored to their functions, first renewing their oath of obedience. I complied with this general request the more willingly, as it was an object of great consequence to give an example and establish my authority by this proceeding. After I had sent my orders on shore in writing to Mr. Crustiew, I communicated the contents of the letter I had received to the whole company; it was as follows:

“Health to the brave and intrepid commander of the vessel *St. Peter* and all his company.

“Dear friends and companions, we heard with much joy of your happy arrival on this island.

“The men whom you sent to find us have informed us of your whole intentions, and we

“have detained them less as hostages than as friends, whom we are desirous of sending back

“with provisions, which you must be in want of.

“Permit our companions who bring this letter to go on board your ship; it is probable they

“may meet with some acquaintance, which would be very agreeable to us. We entreat the com-

“mander to inform us, whether he thinks proper to consent to a conference with us, and for

“this purpose we pray that he will send back our companions, and inform us of the place of rendezvous. We wish you all prosperity, and re-

“commend ourselves to your friendship. Adieu.

“JEAN OCHOTYN,

“in the name of the company.”

After having heard the different opinions respecting what was the most proper to be done, I determined to send back one of the five with my answer, and to keep the other four until the return of my own people. My letter was conceived in the following terms:

“I cannot

“ I cannot express the satisfaction which I received from the information of your residence on this island. The conduct and behaviour of the famous Ochotyn have secured him my esteem for this year past, and nothing prevents my seeing him and assuring him of my friendship.

“ Do not attribute the precautions which I require for our interview to mistrust; but persuade yourself that an excess of prudence is hurtful only to men who are destitute of courage. I require therefore, that to-morrow, at six o'clock, Mr. Ochotyn shall repair with four of his people to the southern point of the bay, where I will come at the same hour, with an equal number; as soon as we come in sight of each other, we will lay down our arms and join company.

“ Maurice August.”

This day was employed in carrying on board the biscuit which our people had made out of the damaged flour. Towards the evening, I permitted six of our associates to go on a hunting expedition, with orders to return at six in the morning. Mr. Meder returned on board, and brought with him several nuts and some pieces of camphor wood, which had been wrought; he found these on the shore. About eleven o'clock we found the cable was cut, and weighed the anchor with great difficulty. At five in the morning I fired three guns, and leaving the command of the vessel in the hands of Mr. Panow, I embarked in the shallop with four associates. At three quarters after five I arrived at the point, where I found Mr. Ochotyn on shore, by whom I was very politely received. He was a handsome figure, thirty-six years of age, and spoke very good German and French. After the first civilities he related his history and adventures, which deserve a particular narration. I shall confine myself, however, to the substance, which is as follows:

VOL. I.

U

Mr

Mr. Ochotyn was a man of family in Saxony, and served under the Empress Elizabeth, in the rank of captain, in the regiment of Smolenskoï, which he left for the employment of Adjutant to General Apraxin. When that General was arrested, by order of the Empress, he was himself likewise sent to prison, with Mr. Baron Khusewsky, who is still an exile at Jakutzk, under the name of Fiskin. Mr. Ochotyn was not delivered from prison until he was sent as an exile into Siberia. On his arrival at Jakutzk, he obtained the favour of being sent to Ochoczka, where he engaged himself on board a ship fitted out for catching beavers. He made two voyages in this vessel, but, during the third, having secured the attachment of fifty of the crew, he seized the vessel at the Aleuthes islands, with which he made prize of two others, whose crews joined his fortune. His party at first consisted of one hundred and thirty-four determined men, able to contend with the maritime force of Ochoczka. Eighteen months afterwards he had the good fortune to establish himself on one of the largest of the Aleuthes islands, where he formed connections, by means of the marriages of his companions with the girls of the country. The dependence he could place on the friendship of the natives of these islands had determined him to form colonies; but, as he was without the necessary arms and utensils, he had determined to visit Kamchatka and Ochoczka, with the intention of utterly destroying these two establishments, and carrying off every thing which he might find suitable to his purposes.

After he had finished his explanation, he proposed to me to join forces in the execution of this project of eminent vengeance, which we had both equal reasons for being desirous of. In answer to this direct proposal, I replied, that I was highly mortified that it was not in my power to comply with

with his intentions, because my situation required a speedy return to Europe; besides which, I represented to him that his present force was sufficient to insure the success of his enterprize. But as he was determined to form colonies in the islands, I advised him to address himself to some European power, to obtain their support; for which purpose I offered him my services. These reflections appeared reasonable to him, and he accepted my offers, as I shall notice more amply in its place. On my part, I gave him a faithful account of my adventures, and we swore friendship to each other. After which, we separated; he to join his companions, and myself to return on board, where I found every thing in perfect order.

N. B. The family of Mr. Ochotyn is known in Saxony by the name of Leuchtenfeld, and he referred, in proof of his assertion, to Baron Laffert, a Prussian officer, who was exiled to Kolima, and returned to Europe in 1760, in consequence of the pressing reclamation which was made by his Majesty the King of Prussia.

Monday May the 23d, 1771, in the bay St. Maurice, in Beering's Island, clear weather, wind S. W. the whole day was employed in repairing the vessel. At three o'clock a canoe arrived from Mr. Ochotyn, with a present of one hundred and fifty fine beaver skins, in return for which I sent him two hundred pounds of gunpowder, one hundred pounds of lead, and a considerable quantity of iron work, &c. but the most acceptable present to Mr. Ochotyn's people was, two hundred and forty ells of cloth and twenty-five sacks of flour.

In the evening I sent on board twenty-two sacks of biscuit and two casks of salt fish. In the night I visited Mr. Ochotyn, in company with Mr. Panow; we found six cabins well built, and defended by a pallisade, flanked with four small cannon. He

was seated near a fire, with thirty-five associates. Tea was first served up, and afterwards we employed the whole night in conversation, and in drawing up letters, which he gave me, with a view to determine some European power to assist his projects. At day break I took my leave, and returned on board at eight o'clock. At ten, I assembled the whole company, and proposed quitting the island to continue our voyage to China, from which place we might most conveniently return to Europe. Upon this proposal, the company requested time to consider, and their resolution was postponed till the following day.

According to the report, the whole company in good health.

Tuesday May 24th, in the bay of St. Maurice, at the isle of Beering, foggy weather, wind disposed to squalls from the southward. At two in the afternoon my adjutant presented three deputies from the company, who informed me, that the resolution of the society was taken, and that they were determined to seek a passage to the northward of Kamchatka, as the season, being summer, assured our success, and even supposing we should find insurmountable obstacles, we should be always able to reach the continent of America. To this representation, as I had understood from my intimate friends that the company was resolved to follow their plan in spite of me, I consented, because unwilling openly to oppose their decision. For a great part of the company, after having reflected on what had happened at Kamchatka, might probably have repented, and have been disposed to act treacherously towards me, as the neighbourhood of Kamchatka would facilitate all their attempts.

In the evening I received advice from Mr. Ochotyn, that Mr. Stephanow had written to him, acquaint-
ing

ing him, that he himself, together with a party of our associates, were resolved to enter into his troop; in consequence of which Mr. Ochotyn advised me to quit the island as soon as possible, and assured me, that in case of a revolt, he would assist me in punishing the guilty. I mustered the whole company, and declared to them that I should not follow their plan but with regret, as I was persuaded, that it would lead us into misfortunes, which it was now in our power to avoid. I assured them that I did not think it possible to double the cape Tsukcsi, and that, when the easterly monsoon failed, we might find it impossible to reach the coast of America; but that as I was determined to sacrifice my private opinions to the wish of the company, which should at all times be my law, I would satisfy their expectation, though at the same time I thought it necessary to warn the society, that I had well-founded reasons to suspect that some among them were engaged in a design prejudicial to our common interests, and that I forebore mentioning the leaders, merely with the hope that it would cause them to return to their duty, and that they ought to attribute my lenity to this motive. Being thus determined to quit the island with the first wind, I sent a party on shore to erect a cross with the following inscription:

“ May the 24th, 1771. Maurice August Aladar de Benyowsky, after his happy deliverance from exile at Kamchatka, caused this cross to be erected during his stay at this island.”

At ten o'clock Mr. Stephanow asked leave to speak with me in private. When I had admitted him into my cabin, he informed me that he had discovered a plot against me, and that he was resolved to quit me no more, but look to my preservation. I expressed my surprize at this, and freely declared, that if I had apprehended any thing, I should

I should have arrested him the first, as I had sufficient proofs against him; but that as I was not of a timid disposition, he was indebted, for his safety, to my contempt. After this answer I communicated the letter of Mr. Ochotyn to him, and informed him, that I should be disposed to forget every thing, and would not ask him even to name his accomplices, provided he shewed a proper repentance, and gave me no occasion to recollect his criminal disposition, and, as a proof how far my delicacy to him proceeded, I would promise to keep his behaviour a profound secret, lest he should be universally despised, upon its being known. The firmness with which I spoke to him overcame him, and he threw himself at my feet, acknowledging himself guilty, and imploring my forgiveness, which I granted.

According to the report, all well.

Wednesday, May the 25th, close cloudy weather; the island covered with fogs; wind variable, between south and west; A south-south-west wind in the offing. Set sail. At three hoisted in the *shallop* and small boat, and directed our course to the northward. In the evening the wind changed from south to east. In the morning the northernmost point of the island bore from east to east, one quarter south.

According to the report, all well; latitude in, 55 degrees, 58 minutes; longitude from Bolsha, 7 degrees, 56 minutes. Wind south, south-south-west and south-south-east; current south-east; course north.

Thursday, May the 26th, clear weather, with snow at intervals, but freezing. A heavy swell from south-west. In the evening saw some pieces of floating wood with ice upon them. At the close of the night saw several flights of birds, directing their course from north to south. During the whole night the sky was clear, and the stars shone bright,
but

but the cold increased and began to freeze our rigging. At day-break we were surrounded with floating wood and pieces of ice. About ten o'clock a whale, of a very large size, came so near us, that I was obliged to fire at it. The second ball caused it to dive.

According to the report, all in good health; latitude in, 57 degrees, 45 minutes, north; longitude from Bolsha, 7 degrees, 54 minutes. Wind south-west; current from south to north; course north.

Friday, May the 27th, under sail. Clear weather and excessive cold, wind strong and irregular, with a very heavy sea. Our vessel struck several times against ice-drifts, of enormous magnitude, the surface of which was covered with wood. In the evening we were set fast between two ice-drifts, which floated in the direction of the vessel; the pitching of the ship caused a considerable damage to her fore parts against the ice; during the night we had a sudden squall, which threatened us with instant destruction. The violent pressure of the ice against the vessel, (the creaking noise of whole timbers greatly added to our apprehensions) produced a considerable leak, which occasioned us to pump without ceasing. In the morning we found our sails damaged and entirely frozen, for which reason I gave orders to keep a fire constantly at the foot of each mast upon the deck, which was likewise covered with ice, two inches thick. By this means I succeeded in thawing the sails. About ten o'clock, the ice-drift on the starboard side broke away, and we disengaged ourselves from that on the larboard.

According to the report, all in good health; cleared the well of thirteen inches of water; latitude in, 58 degrees, 0 minutes; longitude in, 9 degrees, 59 minutes; wind south-west; current from

from south-west to north-east; course east-north-east.

Saturday, May the 28th, clear weather without snow, but insupportably cold. A strong irregular wind, with a heavy swell from north-north-east; got down the damaged yards and replaced them by others. At three o'clock observed a vessel to the northward, at three leagues distant. In the evening hove the lead, and found no bottom. In the night the weather was exceedingly clear and cold. The wind freshened, and the ship made good way. At day-break saw land; at eleven o'clock I gave directions to make a sketch of its appearance, and, though I was embarrassed by the disagreement of the Russian charts, I took it for cape Apachazana. Latitude in 59 degrees, 0 minutes; longitude in 13 degrees, 20 minutes; wind west-south-west; current from north to south; course east-north-east.

Sunday, May the 29th, a strong breeze and close cloudy weather, with a heavy swell from north-west, which frequently endangered us by driving large pieces of ice against the vessel. The considerable masses of these ice-drifts formed whole mountains around us, and threatened us with inevitable destruction, for the vessel being struck every instant by them was strongly agitated, and large masses of ice freezing to the ship's sides, and occasionally lifted out of the water by her motion, damaged her on all sides. Every roll was followed by an astonishing noise, occasioned by the rupture of these icy appendages. Our fears were greatly augmented by the increase of the water in the hold, and during the night, the whole company were alarmed even to stupefaction. About four in the morning the wind increased, and carried away our sprit-sail-yard; and about five we lost our foretop-mast. At six o'clock the vessel lay down on the larboard side, and the tiller could not be moved. Luckily for us, however,

however, the arrival of day-light enabled us to see that part of the ice was jammed in between the rudder and the stern-post. I sent two of the company to beat it away, and afterwards we righted the vessel. It was very fortunate that this accident did not happen in the night, as in that case we should have been lost without remedy. About noon the wind abated, and we perceived ourselves at the distance of two leagues and a half off shore, of which I took a view.

At seven hours and a half we had twenty-two inches water in the hold, which we cleared.

According to the report three sick. Latitude in, 59 degrees, 10 minutes; longitude in, 14 degrees, 34 minutes; wind west-north-west; current from north-east to south-west; course east, one quarter north.

Monday, May the 30th, close cloudy weather. The wind veered round to the south-east, with lowering weather in the north-east quarter; hove the lead occasionally, and at five got ground at eighty-five fathom; grey sand, and broken shells. The sea covered with ice-drifts.

At nine Mr. Crustiew requested the meeting of committee, in the name of the company, which I immediately complied with. As soon as the associates were assembled they requested me to continue our course no longer towards the north, as they were convinced that it would be attended with our destruction. This occasion gave me ample matter to reproach them for the little confidence they had shewn me, in compelling me to hold this course. I thought it necessary to represent to them the many unhappy consequences which would result from my being exposed a second time to submit to their pleasure. The dreadful objects which had alarmed them the preceding day, were still present around us, and gave every degree of efficacy to my discourse

discourse: I therefore found no difficulty in obtaining from the whole company a promise, that in future they would leave me at liberty to do whatever I might think proper and advantageous. As a mark of my satisfaction, I gave orders for an extraordinary allowance of brandy to be given them. At ten o'clock Mr. Panow informed me, that several of our associates were resolved to quit us at the first place where we might anchor. This discovery was immediately verified by the appearance of four of them, who demanded, in the name of a party, the number of which they refused to declare, to go on shore, under pretence of making a provision of beavers, whose skins might be of service to them on future occasions. The resolute manner in which these deputies made their demand, gave me reason to fear a mutiny, which threatened to be so much more dangerous, as we were in sight of land adjoining to Kamchatka. For this reason after having requested they would wait a moment for my resolution, I ordered Mr. Wynbladth to collect a party of such associates as we could most depend on, and come with them into my cabin, while Mr. Panow might overlook the movements of all those, whom we had reason to suspect. This order was immediately put in execution, and, directly afterwards, I caused the mutineers to be seized, and gave orders for a council to be held in the afternoon for their examination.

According to the report, five sick, four prisoners. At six we had eighteen inches water in the well, which we cleared. Latitude in, 59 degrees, 40 minutes; longitude in, 16 degrees, 45 minutes; wind south-south-west; current from north to south; course north-east, one quarter east.

Tuesday, May the 31st, clear weather and a strong wind, which permitted us to use only our lower sails: the sea covered with ice-drifts. At

two

two P. M. assembled the council, to examine the prisoners. Andreanow declared that their number was twenty-two, and that Mr. Stephanow was probably at their head, though he could not positively affirm it, as he had not heard him mentioned except by Sacharinow, which the latter denied. The council advised calling all hands, after which I stated the fact, and requested their advice on this occasion. Their resolution was unanimous to punish the criminals severely, and, if the author could be discovered, to throw him into the sea. In consequence of their resolution, those whom I had reason to suspect as chiefs of the plot, were condemned to receive each twenty-five lashes; and the others, upon expressing their sorrow, were discharged, after asking pardon of the company. But, as I had just cause to fear the consequences of this mutiny, I took away their arms. Mr. Panow, irritated against his relation, whom he found always busied in caballing, declared to him, that he was determined to put him to death himself, on the first similar occasion. This declaration, made in the presence of the whole company, produced an admirable effect.

In the evening I was alarmed by an outcry and tumult upon deck, occasioned by Sacharinow, the friend of Stephanow, who threatened to kill Sibeaw; but as Mr. Crustiew was present he caused Sacharinow to be seized and put in irons.

The night was clear, but the cold was so intense that all the water in the hold was frozen. Happily for us the wind had driven away the ice. At ten we saw several whales swimming from north to south. At eleven punished Sacharinow with 50 lashes.

According to report, eleven sick; three water-casks burst. Cleared the well of sixteen inches of water, at six A. M. Latitude in, 61 degrees, 37 minutes: longitude in, 19 degrees, 3 minutes; wind south.

south-east ; current from the north ; course north-north-east.

Wednesday, June the 1st, cloudy weather and foggy, with cold. Few drifts, but the ship surrounded with floating wood. Saw several flight of birds called Urille. These are all over white except the head, the extremities of the wings and the tail, which are black. The beak and feet are of a deep yellow. They came so near us that I shot two, and found them as large as ducks, and their flesh of a tolerable good taste. Towards night the wind freshened, and veered to the southward ; it was so strong that I could set only the lower sails. At day-break sounded, and got ground at forty-eight fathoms, sand and shells. At ten, land in sight, bearing east, one quarter south, which we soon after perceived to be an island. As we saw another cape bearing north-east one quarter north, I determined to pass between them, heaving the lead. The depth of water was from twenty-four to thirty-six fathoms. At noon the cape bore north, one quarter west, and the island south.

According to report thirteen sick, the ship making no water. Latitude in 62 degrees, 0 minutes ; longitude in, 22 degrees, 36 minutes. Wind south-south-east ; current from north-west to south-east ; course north-east.

Thursday, June the 2d, variable weather, with snow. A fresh breeze from south to south-south-west, with a heavy sea. Handed the courses, and kept only the mizen and the top-sails set all the night. Saw several sea-wolves and whales. At day-break we were surrounded with ice-drifts, upon which we saw a very great number of land birds. The sounding line was several times cut asunder by the ice. Weather colder than before.

According to report thirteen sick. Cleared the well from nine to four inches of water. Latitude in,

in, 63 degrees, 30 minutes; longitude in, 25 degrees, 4 minutes. Wind south-south-west; current from north to south; course north-east.

Friday, June the 3d, at three P. M. saw a very thick field of ice, to which a large mass of ice of earth was attached, with shrubs growing on it. I immediately gave orders to sound, and had ground at seventy-four fathoms, coarse sand and shells. The wind freshened at intervals, and it snowed almost continually. Towards evening the wind slackened a little, but soon after came on with redoubled fury and impetuosity. A hurricane arose in the south-west quarter, and blew with such violence that we had small hopes of beholding the break of day. The dashing of the ice against the vessel was so frequent that I expected every moment her sides would have been bulged. Happily I had the precaution to lower our yards and the top-masts; the mizen-mast was carried away. At the break of day the hurricane greatly increased, when on a sudden we perceived, at the distance of a league, a reef upon which the sea broke in a most dreadful manner. The return of day shewed us more clearly the danger we had passed, by the discovery of masses of ice of a prodigious height piled one upon another. Our soundings were twenty-six fathom, and at ten o'clock we saw land.

According to the report fifteen sick; the ship making much water. Latitude in, 64 degrees, 45 minutes; longitude in, 26 degrees, 30 minutes. Wind south-west; current from north to south; course north-north-east and north-east one quarter north.

Saturday, June the 4th, being resolved to hold on my course until I had determined the distance between the two capes, which the Russians affirm to be very near each other, I stood to the north-west along shore, and about four P. M. observing that

that the northern part of the land of the cape of America drew to the eastward, and stood off. At five saw land bearing west south-west, which we soon perceived to be islands; the ice which the current brought upon us carried us so near that we saw them in the night, and distinguished three in number at day break. To avoid the direction of the ice-drifts I made the best of my way by setting sail, and at ten A. M. we discovered land, and two vessels standing towards us. Our soundings were thirty-four fathom. At eleven, moored at the distance of three leagues, in twenty-two fathom, and took a view of the land. Latitude in, 65 degrees, 20 minutes; longitude in, 25 degrees, 30 minutes. Wind south-west; current from the north-east; course north-north-west.

Sunday, June the 5th, at anchor, surrounded with ice; the wind irregular, and increasing, with a heavy sea. At three P. M. the boats reached us, and appeared to be Tsukci. I invited them on board by a Koreack, who was with us: They came without fear. It was by their means that I learned positively, that we were no further distant from Tsukotzkoy nofs than about fourteen leagues; that the islands we had seen were four in number, the most southerly being the largest; and that the cape we had quitted in the evening, was that of the great land Alakina, the name by which the Tsukci denote America. At four, finding myself in danger from the ice, and being informed that it was impossible to pass further, I determined to return to the coast of America, for which the wind was favourable; at this instant the cable was cut by the ice-drifts, and I had only time to re-embark the Tsukci, to whom I made a present of some knives and brandy. At five P. M. set sail under the courses, the ship making much water. About ten we perceived an appearance of blackness to the southward,
which

which indicated the vicinity of the last mentioned islands. The ice incommoded us less, as the direction of the vessel was with the current. About six P. M. doubled the cape of Alakfina, and at eleven discovered an entrance between the breakers and the shore. The cape sheltered us from the ice-drifts, and left us at liberty to work the ship; I therefore determined, at all events, to seek for anchorage.

According to the report, twelve sick, the ship making at the rate of thirty-eight inches of water per day. Latitude in, 64 degrees 50 minutes; longitude in, 26 degrees, 4 minutes; wind south-west, current north; course south-south-east.

Monday, June the 6th, having approached the land, I discovered a bay in which I moored. Soundings from eight fathoms to * and I surveyed this harbour into which run two brooks.

As soon as we had moored, I ordered twenty-eight associates on shore, to set up tents made of our sails, and at two and a half P. M. I went on shore myself with Mr. Csurin, who having observed a place which promised to give us an opportunity of careening the ship, proposed to visit the spot. I therefore gave the necessary orders for unloading her cargo, and Mr. Csurin was charged to overlook and make the necessary preparations. Thirty six of the associates, under the command of Mr. Panow were directed to undertake this, while the rest employed themselves in hunting, fishing and cutting of wood.

Tuesday June the 7th, all the people being busied at work, I requested Mr. Kuzneczow, as the most alert, to take some of the associates with him, and go in quest of discoveries. This day Mr. Csurin informed me, that though the ship's timbers were strained, yet it would be capable of sailing in the

* Blank in the manuscript.

southern seas, and that the leaks were occasioned only by the loosening of the seams, which he hoped to remedy by caulking, in a few hours. This account was very agreeable to me, and I was assured of its truth by actual inspection. Mr. Kuzneczow did not return till eight in the evening, when he informed me, that he had ascended the neighbouring mountain to the northward, and had discovered land to the north-east, but that to the eastward there lay an immense country with few mountains, and in many places without snow, and intersected by rivers. The approach of night not having permitted him to distinguish remote objects, he asked permission to take others of the associates with him to pursue his discoveries to the eastward; for he assured me, that he had observed signs of its being inhabited. Seeing him so well disposed, and being desirous of obtaining a positive knowledge of this country, I permitted him to complete his discovery. I passed the night with several of my friends, in watching our associates, as there was reason to fear some plot, but happily they were quiet.

Wednesday, June the 8th, the vessel being caulked, was loaded again, and the water-casks filled. Our fishery produced one cask and a half of fish, which we salted, and our hunting party brought only twenty beavers, with some sea-wolves; but they likewise brought us a great provision of garlick, and 740 roots of a very agreeable taste: They were nearly of the size of a child's head and weighed from three to five pounds. At eleven A. M. all the people were on board, and we waited only the return of Mr. Kuzneczow.

According to the report, thirteen sick, the ship making from seven to eleven inches of water per day.

Thursday, June the 9th. At one P. M. Mr. Kuzneczow arrived at the shore: I sent the small
boat

boat for him, and when he came on board he informed me, that he had discovered, at the distance of four leagues, an habitation composed of fourteen huts, but that the inhabitants had fled, and he had found only an old woman and some children in their huts. The old woman was of a very dark complexion, with many figures painted on her forehead, and her nostrils bored; but as he could not make himself understood by any word of the Koriac or Tsukcsi language, he could derive no information from her: he found several bows and arrows, with the heads very well made, of iron, in the huts, and brought them away, as he knew that they would be acceptable to me, as well as an habit almost complete made of birds feathers. As he found nothing more which was remarkable, he retired, after leaving several knives and small mirrors, in the room of the things he had carried away; which part of his conduct, I very strongly approved. This discovery* at last convinced me, that I had been sufficiently fortunate to verify the distance between the two capes, concerning which so many conjectures have been made, and of which the Russians have spoken so falsely; for it is not true, that any vessel has passed this strait, though the people employed on this voyage went as far as Anadir, where their vessel was cast away in 15 degrees of longitude from Bolsha, and 73 degrees of latitude. They finished their journey by land to Anadir, and thence to Kamchatka, but not by sea, as they have published. At three P. M. weighed, and made sail out of the bay of Aladar; our course was south-east, one quarter east, and we were favoured by a strong tide. At day-break I discovered that we had passed between the continent and an island named Aladar,

* The Count was mistaken, in supposing he ever reached America. See the editor's preface.

at the same time that I saw another cape on the main land, which formed a bay, I observed that the middle of this bay lay north. About ten A. M. saw another cape, the extremity of which is distinguished by a mountain in the form of a sugar-loaf.

Latitude in, 63 degrees, 10 minutes; longitude in, 28 degrees, 25 minutes; wind west-south-west; current from north-west; course south-east, one quarter south.

Friday, June the 10th, having observed that the coast inclined to the eastward, I determined to sail along it, as we were no longer incommoded by the ice-drifts, and the wind was favourable. We passed an agreeable day, which was the first since our departure from Kamchatka. The wind was fresh, though not too strong, the sea moderate, and the ground from forty-five to twenty-six fathom; the night was no less beautiful than the day. At five in the morning we saw a prodigious quantity of birds, whose flight was directed from south-east to north-west, but we lost sight of the land, and did not again come in sight till near ten hours, when we saw it at a very great distance in the north-east quarter. Our course brought us nearer and nearer, and at three quarters after eleven I took the view.

According to the report, nine sick; the pump clear; latitude in, 63 degrees, 0 minutes; longitude in, 31 degrees, 4 minutes; wind west-south-west; current from the south; course east, one quarter south.

Saturday, June the 11th, fine clear weather with a strong steady breeze, the land constantly in sight; many flights of birds seen in the direction of yesterday; the people on board uncommonly quiet. At ten I observed a headland, and the direction of the coast was to the eastward.

According

According to the report, seven sick, the pump clear; latitude in, 61 degrees, 42 minutes; longitude in, 33 degrees, 40 minutes; wind west; no current; course south-east, one quarter south.

Sounded, and got ground thirty-eight fathom.

Sunday, June the 12th, fine clear weather, and wind as yesterday. At eight P. M. the land being in sight from east to north, founded, and got ground at twenty-two fathom; shortened sail, and as the blackness of the horizon indicated the proximity of the land, came to anchor in fourteen fathom. At day-break found ourselves at the distance of a league and a half from a headland to the eastward, and another cape lay north one quarter north*, distant five leagues; near the entrance of a bay, which strongly tempted me to come to, but the associates insisted that we should make the shortest course to some European establishment, as they represented that they had not entered into any engagement to run over the ocean in search of discoveries; I thought proper, therefore, to satisfy their desires, and abandoning my project, I weighed, and continued to sail along the coast.

According to the report, five sick, the pump clear; latitude in, 60 degrees, 40 minutes; longitude in, 35 degrees, 52 minutes; wind west; current south-west; course south-south-east.

Depth of water twenty-six fathom.

Monday, June the 13th, the weather began to change and became squally; handed the top-sails, and continued our course under the lower sails. To conform to the resolution of the company, I kept as near the wind as possible. In the night it was a dead calm, and the ship rolled in a dangerous manner. At day-break, no land being in sight, we were surrounded by floating herbage. The com-

* So in the manuscript.

panions expressed their satisfaction at the mildness of the climate we had sailed into; at ten saw there elevated rocks, and sailed round the southernmost.

According to the report, five sick, the pump clear; latitude in, 59 degrees, 10 minutes; longitude in, 34 degrees, 0 minutes; wind west, and west-north-west; no current; course south-west, one quarter south.

Very high land in sight to the eastward, distant nine or ten leagues.

Tuesday, June the 14th, close weather, inclining to stormy, the clouds becoming heavier and in heaps one above the other. The wind veered to the north-west, and increased its force, but as at the same it became steadier, I ventured to set the top-sails. The smoothness of the water encouraged me to take this advantage. The weather in the night was similar to that in the day, no land being in sight, but we observed its situation by the blackness which covered the eastern part of the horizon; sounded several times, but got no bottom.

According to the report, five sick, the pump clear.

N. B. Saw the land which I sketched; latitude in, 57 degrees, 25 minutes; longitude in, 32 degrees, 0 minutes; wind north-west; no current; course south-west, one quarter south.

Wednesday, June the 15th, having observed signs of an approaching gale of wind during the whole morning, I handed the top-sails, and got down the mizen top-mast; it came on by degrees, and its greatest force continued only three hours, but its violence was excessive; kept only the lower sails set for the rest of the day. At six we were between the cape and the island, which we doubled, but a second island being in sight, I lay to under the mizen, with the ship's head to the eastward; but the force of the wind at last obliged me in the morning

ing to lay to under her bare poles. The violence of the rolling of the ship stretched our shrouds and back-stays in such a manner, that in the morning the masts were almost entirely without support; we remedied this as well as possible, by seizing them together with ropes.

Thursday, June the 16th, we were in danger of running a ground on an island, which I avoided by little less than a miracle. This was a day of extreme danger, as every sea went over the ship, and the pumps being unable to keep her clear endangered our foundering. In this affliction I saw the loss we should undergo of the rich furs we had on board, which promised to be worth near a million of piastres at China.

Friday, June the 17th, the wind insensibly slackened, and the company laboured hard to clear the ship out of her state of confusion. At day-break it was almost calm; we therefore set up the shrouds and back stays, and got up the yards and top-masts. At nine the wind entirely died away, and the sun appearing, gave us an opportunity to make an observation.

According to the report, 19 sick; pumps constantly going without being able to clear the well. Latitude in, 55 degrees, 35 minutes; longitude in, 31 degrees, 30 minutes.

Saturday, June the 18th, variable winds from north to north-east; heavy weather, with an irregular swell. As I had determined to anchor at the island mentioned to me by Mr. Ochotyn, I resolved to stand well to the eastward, upon its parallel of latitude, for fear of missing it: For this reason I sailed on a south-east course. At two P. M. being desirous of inspecting the cargo, I caused the hold to be opened, out of which issued putrid vapours, doubtless from the corruption of the skins. The women and sick, who were shut up below during the storm, were carried

carried upon deck: They at first found themselves faint, but afterwards grew better. In the night the swell became less, and the wind fixed at north-east, one quarter north. The pumps were constantly kept at work without being able to clear the well, and the course of the vessel was greatly impeded. At day-break saw land from the mast head, right a-head; used every effort to come near it; about noon we saw it was an island; sounded several times, but got no bottom.

According to the report, 18 sick; the vessel making 18 inches of water per hour. Latitude in, 54 degrees, 28 minutes, north; longitude, 32 degrees, 46 minutes; wind north-east, one quarter north; current from north-east; course south-east, one quarter south.

Sunday, June the 19th, at one P. M. the weather being fine, the wind moderate, and very little swell, I handed all the sails, and sent sixteen men, under the command of Messrs. Wynbladth and Kuzneczow, on shore in the shallop, to make discoveries, while the ship drove to the southward along shore. All this day was employed in repairing the damages sustained by the late gale of wind. At seven Mr. Kuzneczow returned with two boats, conducted by the islanders, having two Russian strangers at their head. He informed me, that the island was named the Greater Kadik, and that there was another island to the south-east, which the inhabitants called the Island of Black Foxes. On his landing he was surrounded by the islanders, armed with lances and arrows, who appeared inclined to dispute the passage with him. He called out, that if they were of the party of Mr. Ochotyn they should acknowledge his friends; upon which exclamation two Russians came forward for a more particular explanation, and when they were at last convinced that we were really connected with Mr. Ochotyn, from the account

count Mr. Kuzneczow gave of his stay at Beering's island, they appealed the natives, who laid down their arms, and came hastily to give marks of their satisfaction. They proposed to conduct Mr. Kuzneczow to their habitations; but his desire of speedily returning prevented his accepting their invitation. Two Russians, therefore, determined to accompany him, and as a proof of their good intentions, they had loaded the boats with different roots and a quantity of beavers and foxes skins.

From this account I gave orders for receiving the islanders, and entertaining them in the best manner in our power; while I lost no time in receiving the friends of Ochotyn. They informed me, that their number amounted to twenty-two upon the island, and that the tajons of the place had submitted to the command of Mr. Ochotyn; by whose orders they were at that time busied in constructing several vessels. They then requested that I would give them some proof of my having had an interview with Mr. Ochotyn. I thought proper to satisfy them, by exhibiting his letter to the Tajon of Urumusir; after perusal of which, having no further mistrust, they offered their services as pilots, to conduct the ship to Urumusir. I accepted their offer with great pleasure, but I represented to them that one would be sufficient. They therefore drew lots, and the chance fell upon Gregoir Salasiow. We put ourselves under his charge till morning, and then having made up a present for the tajon, which I entrusted to the companions of Salasiow, I distributed knives and looking-glasses to all the islanders on board, and dismissing them we pursued our voyage with our two boats astern.

At nine in the morning we found ourselves at the mouth of a bay, where Salasiow requested leave to go on shore to procure a Bajdara, to pilot us; I consented, and he returned before noon with a boat

boat and men. The agility with which this small boat was managed, and the velocity of its course, though it had no other sail than a small piece of cloth, fastened to a stick in the centre of the vessel, astonished me very much.

According to the report, eighteen sick; the pumps constantly going; latitude in 54 degrees, 00 minutes; longitude 32 degrees, 30 minutes; wind north-east; current north-east; course south-west, one quarter south. Land in sight all day.

Monday, June 20th. Fine warm weather, moderate wind, and no swell: many flights of birds in sight, which Salaslow observing me to notice, informed me, that at this season, the geese and ducks retired towards Alakfina. From the account he gave me, I was confirmed in my opinion, that the land of Alakfina was the main continent of America. He assured me that the distance to the great land, did not exceed thirty-five or forty leagues; and that the islanders often made voyages thither, to visit their friends and relations; the Tajon of Kadik, being married to one of the daughters of the Tajon of Alakfina Homin. About three o'clock, having the boats a-head, conducted by the islanders, we saw an island, which Salaslow affirmed to be the Island of Foxes; and he informed me, that there were three others to the southward of that island. About five we saw another island, on the starboard; and Salaslow informed me, that there were four together. The situation of these islands occasioning a very irregular sea, I determined to come to; for which purpose I consulted my pilot, who informed me, that the depth of water where we then were, was twenty fathom. In fact we found it eighteen, on sounding. I anchored in the mid-channel, and immediately afterwards Salaslow went on shore in his boat, having first informed me, that I might continue my course through the same channel, and that he would rejoin me before I got out

out of the streights; for which purpose he begged I would hoist a blue flag, and fire several guns. In the night we observed several fires upon the great island, on our starboard hand, and one on the small island. At five in the morning, weighed, and made sail, having a beautiful view of the island along which we coasted. At ten we saw a second island, on the larboard bow, and its position agreed with the information of Salasfow.

According to the report, sixteen sick; pumps constantly at work; latitude in 53 degrees, 49 minutes; longitude in 30 degrees, 41 minutes; wind north-east; current north-east; course south-west, one quarter west.

Tuesday, June 21. Wind and weather as yesterday. Continued our course at a good rate. This day Mr. Panow assured me, that we were indebted for the good behaviour of the company, to our friendship with Mr. Ochotyn; and that he was well assured, that if it had not been for the fear of Mr. Ochotyn, a party of the companions would have run the ship on shore. In fact, the perfect tranquillity of the whole company, though worn out with hard work at the pumps, led me to give credit to Mr. Panow's conjecture; but I was contented to enjoy the advantage of this tranquillity, without minutely enquiring into the causes which produced it.

At five, Mr. Salasfow returned, with three other vessels, which brought a quantity of dried fish, roots, and one hundred and sixty beavers skins. On his arrival on board, Mr. Salasfow presented me with the provisions and furs, in the name of the Tajon of the island, whose son he brought with him, with a request to convey him to the island Urumusir, where he proposed to visit his relations. I consented to this with pleasure, and returned his father an assortment of toys, with a hand-
some

some gun, as a present; and after having distributed some trifles among the islanders, I dismissed them. At seven we passed the south-west point of the island, and came in sight of another, right a-head, which Salaslow told me was named Amichud. We doubled the cape, and resumed a direct course, at about two o'clock. At six we saw an island on the larboard side, which Salaslow informed me belonged to Urumusir; and that there lay another beyond it, which, in fact, was seen by the men at the mast head. At eleven we observed three other islands, on the starboard side, which Salaslow called the Beavers; and we were in full sight of the island Urumusir, at the distance of two leagues. Salaslow undertook to conduct us into the harbour.

According to the report, ten sick; the pumps constantly at work; latitude in, 52 degrees, 25 minutes; longitude in 28 degrees, 15 minutes; wind north-east, quarter east; current north-east; course south-west, one quarter south.

Wednesday, June 22. The wind being calm, hoisted out the shallop and small boat, and towed the vessel. At two o'clock found ourselves at the mouth of a bay, into which we entered, and moored at one cable's length distance from the shore, in four and one-half fathoms water.

As soon as we came to, Salaslow requested to go on shore, to inform the inhabitants and associates of Mr. Ochotyn of our arrival, in order to prevent any disturbance. I sent Mr. Kuzneczow with him, and he returned about three P. M. with two other Russians, who invited me to come on shore, and offered me the use of a commodious lodging, and a store-house, large enough to contain our whole lading. Mr. Kuzneczow informed me that the Russians had promised him every assistance on the part of the islanders; but that I could not see the chief of the island till the following day, on account of the distance

distance of his habitation. Before I left the vessel I gave the command to Mr. Clurin, and left with him twenty-eight associates, whom I could most depend upon. All the rest of the company, including the women and the sick, I took on shore with me. When I landed I was taken to a very convenient habitation, near which stood a spacious building fit for a store-house. As soon as I had appointed the lodgings of the sick, and the women, I established a camp for my people, and sent immediate orders to unload the vessel. This business was particularly intrusted to Messrs. Panow and Wynbladth, and I was content to have Mr. Kuzneczow and Sibaew, with twelve associates, near me.

The two Russians who conducted me to my habitation left me for the purpose, as they said, to assemble their associates and the islanders, in order to visit me in ceremony.

At eight o'clock Salaslow returned to inform me that the chief of the island was coming to pay me a visit, with the wife of Ochotyn, and a great number of the islanders, and consequently that it would be proper to make some small presents to the principal persons, of whom he named eleven. After he had left me to join his companions, I passed the whole night in superintending the landing of our effects, among which our guns were not the smallest concern. Our assiduity was such that, with no other assistance than the shallop and the small boat, the ship was unladen by five in the morning, and I had the satisfaction to see the vessel cleared.

At nine in the morning an old man was announced to me, who spoke the Russian language. He was admitted and came in with a boy of twelve years of age, whom he offered me as a present, which I accepted on condition that he would permit me to make him a present in return. His physiognomy convinced me that he was not a Russian, but as he spoke

spoke the Russian language very well, I was curious to enquire into this prodigy. There is no doubt but he perceived my embarrassment, for he burst into a laugh, and said, "Mr. European, you will be surprized that I call you by that name, but I must inform you that I know more than all the Aleuthes. I was taken by the Cossacks in my youth, who carried me into their own country, where I was conveyed from one town to another, till at last I fell into the hands of a merchant, who sent me with some Cossacks in search of my country, which we at last found, and the Cossacks sent me on shore, that I might invite my countrymen to trade with them. But for my part finding myself restored to my country, I returned no more to the Cossacks, but remained in my own island; where the Tajon having taken an attachment to me, gave me his daughter Kalki in marriage: and as I knew every thing, the Aleuthes made me their Tajon after the death of my father-in-law; and I am now the strongest, the most knowing, and the richest Tajon of the Aleuthes. As I am now in years I have given up the government to my son, and content myself with being his friend and adviser. My son need no longer fear the Cossacks, for an European Tajon has married his daughter, and this Tajon is a god. For this reason it is that I laughed, and shall laugh on."

From this last expression, understanding that he spoke of Ochotyn, I informed him that I knew him well, and that he was one of my friends, and had intrusted me with a letter for his father-in-law.

On this assurance the good old man embraced me, called me his son, his dear son, and afterwards begged leave to depart, to carry this news to his family. After the departure of this good man, I gave orders to inspect the chests of furs. We did not find one undamaged. I gave orders, therefore, that they should be exposed to the air to dry, and
the

the good ones separated from the rest. The women took charge of this business.

Thursday, June 23. On shore at the bay of Urumfir. At one o'clock I was informed of the arrival of the Tajon, escorted by the Russians of Ochotyn's party, and a very considerable number of attendants. The good old man preceded them all, and presented his wife to me, as did likewise the Tajon his children, with the wife of Mr. Ochotyn and some of the chief islanders. After this ceremony, the company formed a circle, in the midst of which the Tajon seated himself with all his family. I then caused the letter of Mr. Ochotyn to be brought, which I put into the hands of the Tajon. Its contents were as follow :

"Health to my father, the Tajon Tuachta, chief of the Aleuthes islands.

"In the hope, that God will conduct my friend to you, I have given him the present letter, to inform you of our union, and beg that you will give him every assistance he may want.

"I wait the arrival of the vessel to proceed to Kamchatka, whence I hope to return, before the next snow, to embrace my wife, and convince you of my tenderness. All that I shall take from the Cossacks will be for you and your subjects. I recommend likewise, by this present letter, to my companions, to shew every submission to my friend who brings this letter, and to obey him as they would myself. I wish all happiness to my father, our family, my associates, and my wife.

"Signed OCHOTYN."

Beering's Island, May 24, 1771.

This letter was read by a Russian, and interpreted in a loud voice by the father of the Tajon. The wife of Mr. Ochotyn wept, and her tears convinced me that the people, whom we are in the habit of calling

calling Savages, might serve as models to us for friendship and attachment. After the letter was read, one of the Russians advanced and informed me, that he was nominated commanding officer on the island during the absence of Mr. Ochotyn; and that in consequence of his orders, he begged me to dispose of him and forty other associates. I thanked him for his offer, and replied, that if some of them were willing to assist us in our works, I should gratefully acknowledge their services. The Tajon, on his part, requested his father to propose to me to enter into friendship with him. For this purpose, he ordered seven vessels made of skin and filled with water to be brought to wash our faces. The Tajon took one, and distributed five others to five other chiefs. The seventh he presented to me. After this ceremony, fire was brought, and every one took a coal, and said, With fire like this we will burn the Cossacks. The oath finished by the distribution of seven arrows, which were broken by the possessors respectively, with the words, Amongst us arms are useless. The attendants then brought stones, and raised a pile in remembrance of our oath. After which I regaled the Tajons with brandy, and distributed at least two hundred pounds of tobacco among the islanders. I likewise distributed my presents, in return for which the Tajon promised me some valuable skins.

At the close of day the islanders retired to an eminence near us, and established their camp. Being informed by the associates of Ochotyn, that they were about to make a festival of rejoicing, I determined to go and see them. I accordingly went, and the Tajon, as soon as he saw me, came to meet me, and introduced me into the circle, that I might have a better opportunity of beholding their dance. In reality it was very singular, for at the sound of the drum the whole company became agitated, as
if

if in the highest rage; and the Russians informed me, that I should soon see the whole company fall asleep, which was the usual effect of an infusion of muchomor, which the islanders drink on such occasions. This incident did not fail to happen soon after, and the Tajon himself fell asleep among the rest. The old man his father was, however, an exception; he accompanied me home, and I embraced the opportunity of inquiring, what reason had induced him to part with the boy he had given me? He replied, that when he was last year at Kadik the Tajon of that island had given him the boy, who was born on the great land of Alexina, where he had doubtless been made prisoner by the Aleuthes, against whom they had sworn a declared enmity; and that being apprehensive of the consequences on the part of the young man, he had determined to get rid of him the first opportunity.

As I had promised, when I accepted his present, that I would make another in exchange, I gave him a handsome gun, one pound of powder, fifty balls, and five pounds of tobacco, with a bottle of brandy. Having thus satisfied him we parted, and I went to rest: Mr. Kuzneczw undertook to keep watch. When I awoke, I learned that twenty-two associates of Mr. Ochotyn's party had undertaken to assist in repairing the ship; and two of them being coopers, were employed in setting up our casks, which we were in great want of for water, as the heat of the climate to which we were going would prevent our availing ourselves of the fresh water from the ice islands, as we had hitherto done.

At nine o'clock, I was informed that a number of young women were come to offer their services, but the report came too late to put it in my power to make any decision, for my associates had every

one

one chosen companions from amongst them. As I was desirous of inspecting the progress of the repairs of the vessel, I accordingly went on board, and had the satisfaction to see that every thing would be compleated in the course of twenty-four hours, and consequently that I might quit the island in two or three days. I was desirous of profiting by this interval, and therefore determined to examine the interior parts of the island, and more especially to visit the islands we had discovered on our approach to Urumusir.

According to the report six sick. A quantity of roots and fish were brought me on the part of the Tajon.

Friday, June 24. I made an excursion, accompanied by Mr. Kuzneczow, towards the eastern part of the island. I passed over the beautiful plains which are certainly susceptible of good cultivation, but I discovered no vestige which rendered it probable that these islanders cultivate the earth. Their food intirely consists in certain roots, fish, and the flesh of beavers and sea cows. The wood which grows on this island is good, and proper for every kind of building.

The habitations of the islanders, several of which we saw and visited, perfectly resembled the balagans of the Kamchadals. After I returned from this excursion, I determined, from the small prospect of meeting with any thing worthy of notice, to make no more, but double my attention, to get the vessel ready for departure.

According to the report six sick.

Saturday, June 25. Mr. Csurin informed me, that the vessel was ready to receive her cargo. I therefore gave orders to this effect to Mr. Crustiew. The associates of Mr. Ochotyn were of great assistance to us in this business.

About

About two o'clock, the father of the Tajon came with a present of sixty skins, and a canoe made of skin; the lightness of which surprized me, for two men could easily carry it, though it had eight oars. The keel only was made of wood, and the rest was whale-bone, covered with the skins of sea wolves, with the hair outwards, sewed together with twine made of the guts of beavers. At five o'clock, the Tajon likewise arrived with presents, and I regaled him and his company with brandy. When he was informed of my approaching departure, he requested a letter for Mr. Ochotyn, and I delivered him one to the following purport:

HONOURABLE FRIEND;

After a painful and disagreeable navigation, in which I was compelled, by the obstinacy of my companions, to sail as far to the northward as 66 degrees, I have at last returned to the south, and have taken advantage of the winds to visit your island. I have received much advantage from the services of Salaslow, one of your associates, whom I particularly recommend to you. On my arrival, your friends and companions have given me every assistance to put my vessel into proper repair for a long voyage; and the islanders, from their example, have behaved with the utmost cordiality to us. The Tajon Tuachta, more especially, has been most friendly and attentive. I could have wished, that the presents I have distributed among the islanders had been of greater value: but alas! you know that Kamchatka is not a place from which any one escapes overloaded with riches; besides which all my possessions consisted in furs, which are plentiful among the islanders. During the time of my stay, I have observed, with satisfaction, that the islanders are sincerely attached to you. I therefore recommend to you to avail yourself, as much as possible,

VOL. I.

Y

of

of their affection; and for that purpose, I would advise you always to have a trusty party of these people near you; for among the Russians, who are with you, there will be some who will shew the disposition of the country. To place yourself out of danger of plots, you must keep your people in constant employment: and I take this occasion once more to repeat, that if I were situated as you are, with two or three vessels suitable to the undertaking, I would retire to the southward, where, doubtless, you will find islands, and the climate will second your attempts to establish a flourishing colony. The knowledge you have of the commerce of China, and the constant resource which you might have to your friends in the Aleuthes islands for furs, to supply this trade, could not fail to put it in your power to make an establishment of the first importance. Adieu, my friend, I wish you every prosperity, and you may depend upon my best exertions to cause some European power to accept your proposals.

Signed MAURICE AUGUSTUS.

After communicating this letter to the Tajon I took my leave, being resolved to embark the following day. At eight in the morning, I gave orders for every one to go on board; and after making presents to Salaslow, and the other associates, I likewise went on board with the sick and the women, where I found every thing in proper order. According to the report, two sick; the vessel drawing seven feet eight inches water.

Sunday, June 26. Fine clear warm weather, and calm. At three o'clock weighed anchor, towed out the vessel, and came to in the mid-channel. The associates celebrated a festival on the occasion of baptizing the young American on board, who
was

was named Sacharie. In the morning, having been informed that there were upwards of fifty women on board, I gave orders for setting them on shore, after the distribution of presents among them. At eleven, A. M. weighed and made sail.

According to the report, two sick; cleared the well, having made no more than eight inches water during the twenty-four hours.

Monday, June 27. At sea; fine temperate weather; wind north-east, rather fresh; course south-west, one quarter south, with all sails set; the three islands in sight till four, P. M. and the south-west point in sight till nine; clear starry weather in the night. At ten in the morning saw land from the mast-head, which, the wind being favourable, we approached within two leagues distance.

According to the report, two sick; the well clear. Latitude in 51 degrees, 30 minutes; longitude in 25 degrees, 25 minutes. Wind north-east; no current; course south-west.

Tuesday; June 28. Altered our course to south one quarter east, to avoid the breakers in sight near the shore. At seven, P. M. the wind freshened from north-east to east, and the sea arose very irregularly, which caused the vessel to labour. At eight, the southern extremity of the island being in sight, bearing north one quarter west we resumed our course, as I was desirous of reconnoitring these islands, which had been described to me as situated in the 48th degree of north latitude. At ten the wind settled at east, and blew with the utmost violence; I had only time to take in the small sails; the impetuosity of the wind reduced the swell, and the sea became as level as a pond; we ran at the rate of ten knots and an half by the log under the mizen. At seven, A. M. the wind began to slacken, and permitted me to set the top-sails, under which we sailed with undiminished velocity. At ten A. M.

saw land right a-head, which at noon was only three leagues distant.

According to the report, one sick; the well clear. Latitude in 49 degrees, 6 minutes; longitude in 22 degrees, 40 minutes. Wind east; no current; course south-west, one quarter south.

Wednesday, June 29. Strong gales of wind throughout; at three passed a cape of the island Cusma; about five the horizon became clouded; and at six we had a shower, which did not last long. The wind returned to the north-east, with such violence as carried away the fore and mizen top-masts. The cargo shifted with the shock, and six butts of water were staved. I was chagrined at this loss, more particularly because I was convinced that our casks would not hold tight in a hot climate.

According to the report, five sick; the pump clear. Latitude in 48 degrees, 40 minutes; longitude in 18 degrees, 30 minutes. Wind north-east; no current; course south-west, one quarter west.

Thursday, June 30. Hazy weather, with rain; wind from north-east to north, with a heavy swell from north-west.

As I was desirous of taking every precaution to secure us against the inconvenience of the want of water, I gave orders for the regular distribution of an allowance. But Mr. Stephanow came and represented to me, in the name of the company, that the allowance of biscuit and water I had set was not enough, and that they required twice as much, as well as an allowance of brandy, which they were in need of to keep up their spirits. This proceeding of Mr. Stephanow irritated me to such a degree, that I threatened to throw him overboard if he continued his cabal. I recollected myself however, and was desirous of convincing him of the absurdity of his conduct. But he paid no attention to me, and left the cabin with the grossest invectives, without doubt

doubt with the intention of carrying his plot into execution. To prevent this, I assembled the chiefs of the company, in order to consult what was best to be done; for I was well convinced, from my knowledge of the individuals who composed Stephanow's party, that they were disposed to proceed to more serious consequences. We had scarcely met, before we received information that Stephanow had encouraged a party of the associates to broach a barrel of water to quench their thirst; and with a view to persuade them more effectually, he had declared that we were near the land, as he was certainly assured by my own observations and the charts I had composed from the information of Mr. Ochotyn, &c. He told them, that he knew very well the reason why I had determined not to anchor at this land, and promised to tell the reason in secret another time; but that it was highly necessary, at this moment, to compel me to obey their orders. This report determined us to go upon deck, to advise the associates to return to their duty; but we found them all armed, with Mr. Stephanow at their head, who spared no imprecation against me, and declared, that as the company had elected him chief, he would preserve my life merely for the purpose of encreasing my sufferings. He then ordered his people to seize me; but luckily for me, Mr. Kuzneczow thought of awakening the associates, who were asleep in their hammocks. These came up the fore-skuttle, to the number of nine, all armed, and prevented them from proceeding to violence. Being thus confined to the fore-castle, we were spectators of the greatest disorders, which Mr. Stephanow himself could not remedy; for the associates of his party having entered the cabin, brought up three casks of brandy; and while this kind of provision lasted, it was partly drank by them, and partly thrown about the deck. In the midst of this debauch the actors were interrupted by the night, and being
all

all drunk, without knowing what they did, or paying the least attention to the remonstrances of Mr. Stephanow, they went down to rest. Seeing himself thus destitute of all support, the unhappy wretch followed them, to represent the dangers they exposed themselves to by suffering me to resume the authority.

We took advantage of their confusion to shut the main hatchway; and while I went to visit my cabin, Mr. Panow, with two associates, Sibaew and Loginow, seized Stephanow, whom they put in irons, and fastened to the mizen-mast.

At one in the morning Mr. Winbladth informed me, that the revolvers, heated by the great quantity of brandy they had drank, and desirous of water, and at the same time not knowing what they did, had staved fourteen casks of water, which was entirely lost, and there remained no more than two casks and an half in all.

Such were the consequences of the rage which Stephanow had excited. My friends advised me to seize the criminals and put them all in irons. But I was too much affected with the prospect of our approaching misery to think of adding to our present and future unhappy reflections by an open dissention.

At five o'clock, having taken the precaution to seize the arms of all who had followed the party of Stephanow, I mustered the whole company on deck, where I exposed to them the conduct of Stephanow, and represented in strong terms the sufferings to which we were now exposed, without the possibility of a remedy. The unhappy men, who had perpetrated the crime of losing our water, were entirely ignorant of the circumstance when informed of it. Their despair then burst forth in accusations of Stephanow, as the author of all that they had done. With one voice they demanded his death; they insisted on sacrificing such a monster, and it was
not

not without the greatest difficulty that I prevailed on them to spare his life. But as it was necessary to shew him that I had power to punish crimes, I proposed that he should be declared unworthy of the society, and condemned him to serve as assistant to the cook. The same sentence was passed upon the Sieur Sudekin, secretary at Kamchatka, whom I had brought away prisoner, and who had since attached himself to Stephanow. Stephanow was then brought to the main-mast to hear his sentence, and as he supposed I should condemn him to death, he was mean enough to implore my compassion, and still meaner after he had heard his sentence read. He thanked me for the pity I had shewn on this occasion. Mr. Panow, enraged at his pusillanimity, would have shot him through the head, if I had not prevented him.

According to the report, twenty-one sick; the pump clear. Latitude in 47 degrees, 40 minutes; longitude in 15 degrees, 30 minutes. Wind from north to north-east; no current; course south-west.

Friday, July 1, 1771. The wind drawing round to the westward, and increasing with rain. Saw a large quantity of floating weed; and the colour of the water appearing changed, sounded several times, but got no bottom. The company employed in collecting rain water, of which we obtained two casks. This supply was very acceptable; but as the water tasted of tar, the associates engaged to drink no other, in order to preserve the rest of our stock for myself, the sick, and our female companions. Mr. Kuzneczow informed me of this resolution. At the close of the evening it fell calm; but at two, A. M. the wind rose, and blew fresh from north-west, one quarter west. At six M. Le Surin informed me that there still remained four casks of water, which were covered with the planks, that formed the cabin of his lady. This account was very agreeable; but

I ordered

I ordered him not to communicate his discovery to his associates. This day we replaced the fore and mizen topmasts.

According to the report, four fack; the pumps clear. Latitude in 46 degrees, 30 minutes; longitude in 12 degrees, 35 minutes. Wind north north-west; no current; course south-west.

Saturday, July 2. Close cloudy weather. At one, P. M. a squall came on, with abundance of rain; after which the wind slackened, and at three it became calm; but the rippling of the sea gave me reason to apprehend that we were in a strong current. At* the sea was so agitated, that the vessel rolled very much, and it was not without some apprehension, that I saw the main and mizen yards touch the surface of the water. At seven the weather became squally from the north-west quarter, from whence we had a strong gale. I had already taken in all the reefs: the course of the vessel through the water made a considerable noise, occasioned by a current contrary to its direction, and to which, no doubt, we were indebted for our preservation; for, in the obscurity of the night, we should not have been otherwise able to have avoided running ashore. The break of day rendered our danger evident, as we saw breakers at the distance of three quarters of a league. I immediately founded, and got ground at thirty-six fathoms, the bottom consisting of mud and broken shells. At nine, A. M. we approached the shore, and anchored in twenty-eight fathoms; after which I immediately sent the small boat on shore, with Mr. Kuzneczow, to examine the coast, in order to discover some port or harbour. The strength of the wind, however, parted our cable, and drove us out; I therefore fired several guns for the boat, as I had

* A blank in the M. S.

little hope of reaching the coast with so impetuous a wind: The fear of losing our boat and people, obliged me to lay to; but the current carrying us rapidly towards the shore, I occasionally set the mizen. This manœuvre fatigued the vessel greatly, and was frequently attended with evident danger of destruction.

According to the report, six sick; the pump clear. Latitude in 45 degrees, 57 minutes; longitude in 11 degrees, 30 minutes. Wind from north-west, to north-west, one quarter west.

Sunday, July 3. A very heavy gale from north-west to west; ship laying to, and firing minute guns, to recal the boat. At four P. M. we clued up the mizen, and the vessel meeting the swell, shipped a considerable quantity of water, and it was with some difficulty that she was righted. The associates, at the close of day, being apprehensive of being exposed to a repetition of the same danger, insisted, that I should either continue my course, or run the vessel aground on a sand bank which they had observed. I represented to them, that it would be an act of the utmost barbarity to abandon nine of our most faithful companions, upon an unknown land, to the mercy of the Savages; and that, therefore, I was determined rather to perish than quit the shore; as I would not consent to bear the reproach of having abandoned any of my companions. I told them, that I was ashamed of their want of delicacy, in making such a proposal as that of deserting their companions; and that, with regard to their second request, it was impossible to carry it into execution, because the wind, having veered round to the eastward, did not permit us to reach the shore at any particular spot; and the only means of accomplishing this, consisted in abandoning the vessel to the current, which might probably throw us on the reef. For these reasons, I informed them that I was
firmly

firmly resolved to consent to no part of their proposal. This determined answer enraged them, and several of them threatened me; among these, Baylakin cried out, that he would soon put an end to the dispute; and, snatching a knife out of the hands of one that stood by, he ran towards me. I prevented his purpose by firing a pistol, which fortunately disabled, without killing him. Upon this, several of the associates prepared to enter into a contest by main force; but the sight of Messrs. Panow, Crustiew, Baturin, Wynbladth, and several others, armed with pistols, and ready to obey my commands, checked their impetuosity. At length the night closed in, without sight of our companions; for this reason I kept two fires on board, and fired cannon at regular intervals. About eight, the watch called out, that he heard a shouting. We all ran to verify the fact, and had the great satisfaction to behold several flashes at a small distance from us. Their short duration convinced us that it was our companions, who fired their musquets, in which circumstance we were not deceived. At a quarter past eight they came on board, on the larboard side, not without some risk of staving the boat. Their happy return confounded the mutineers, who durst not shew their faces.

Mr. Kuzneczow gave me an account of the difficulties and fatigue attending his return; and, indeed it was a miracle that the boat had been able to resist the forces of the sea. His report was, that, an hour after he left the vessel, he arrived near the shore, but finding it impossible to go on shore, he was obliged to row round a headland, which sheltering him from the wind, presented a favourable place of landing in an harbour, where he found several boats at anchor, and a very large two-masted vessel; that when he came on shore, he saw inhabitants, clothed in the Chinese manner, in blue, with parasols. He accosted

costed them without hesitation, having left his six associates in the boat. The islanders invited him to go further up the country; which he should have complied with, if he had not heard the signal for his return. At this signal, he did every thing in his power, by signs and gestures to convince the islanders that he was obliged to return. They shewed no desire to retain him; but all which he could understand, amounted to a wish, on their part, to explain to him that the weather was very unfavourable to go out to sea, and that he ought to stay on shore, and return the next day in the morning. But that, when they perceived he was determined to depart, one among the islanders laid his hand upon his breast, (a sign of friendship, as he understood) and then presented him with his parasol, and a pipe, with a little bag containing tobacco; that he himself, in return, having nothing about him to present the islander, had given him his sabre, mounted with silver; and that the islander, charmed with his behaviour, had given him a knife. With respect to the country, he informed me, that he had seen a number of hogs, but no black cattle; and that the huts, or small houses, built near the shore, were regularly placed, and perfectly shaded by rows of trees, and the coast appeared well wooded.

This report, which was heard by all the company, excited a desire to go on shore; and they intreated me to use every exertion to continue in its neighbourhood. I was no less interested than themselves, and therefore determined to keep near the shore. But all our hopes vanished when we found the wind fix at the west, with redoubled force. I endeavoured to keep my position till two A. M. but then being no longer able to lay to, I set sail under the fore-stay-sail, and departed at the rate of eight or nine knots an hour. At day-break,

the

the vessel was surrounded with porpoises and various sea birds, and the wind continued to freshen.

According to the report, four sick, one wounded; pump clear. Latitude in 45 degrees, 20 minutes; longitude in 13 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind west; course south-east, one quarter east.

Monday, July 4. A hard gale, with occasional showers, which gave me some hope of its slackening; but unfortunately it continued with the utmost violence, and deprived me of every hope of regaining the coast we had quitted; I therefore hauled wind, and held on my course. This day I examined the parasol, which was brought by Mr. Kuzneczow. It was made of paper, soaked with oil, and painted with several Chinese and Japanese characters. The pipe was of a compound metal, of a white colour; and the purse, containing the tobacco, was embroidered satin. The knife was perfectly well tempered, and the handle was ivory, well finished. These circumstances convinced me that the islanders traded with the Japanese. About sun-set the wind abated, and permitted me to set the mizen and close reefed topails.

According to the report, three sick, one wounded. Latitude in 44 degrees, 6 minutes; longitude in 12 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind west; course south-south-west.

Tuesday, July 5. Hot weather, and the wind veering round to the southward. This day was employed in setting up our rigging, which the hot weather had slackened. I likewise changed our sails, which were so rent and worn, that their effect was considerably diminished. I distributed the old sails among the company, to make trowsers.

This day a council was held to determine, whether we ought to sail for Japan; for as I had no positive knowledge of any island, I thought it proper to take this course, to avoid the sufferings which threatened

threatened us for the want of provisions and water. Our provisions consisted of six casks of salt fish, and two casks of dried fish; but the dried fish began to putrify by the heat, and convinced me that we could not use it much longer. All our biscuit was consumed, and our whole resource consisted in these two casks of dried fish, with two casks of rain water, and four casks of sweet water. I could not, therefore, depend on more than six or eight days provision, and fourteen days drink. The council determined to hold our course towards Japan, but to put in at any island we might come in sight of. This resolution was communicated to the whole company, who were very submissive, and consented to the decision, from the fear of hunger. M. Meder, having inspected our provision of salt fish, assured me, that in one or two days I should be obliged to throw the whole overboard; and, in order to turn it to the best advantage, he advised me to boil the salted fish to the consistence of a paste, and afterwards dry the paste into the form of bread, which might serve us in case of extreme need. I very much approved of this advice, and gave him charge to carry it into execution. The night was clear and starry; at six, A. M. the wind became variable, and at ten it fixed at north-west. This day we prepared lines for catching fish, several of which we had seen.

According to the report, five sick, and one wounded; the pump clear. Latitude in 43 degrees, 20 minutes; longitude in 12 degrees, 8 minutes. Wind west-south-west, and north; course south-south east.

Wednesday, July 6. Close cloudy weather to the north west, but the rain having abated the force of the wind and the swell of the sea, we set all our sails, and directed our course to the westward. This day we saw a quantity of floating sea-weed, and several birds, which directed their flight to the north-west.

west. The fishermen took no more than two middling sized fish, weighing together about three pounds. At sun-set we heard thunder, for the first time; the ship's company thereupon entreated me to permit them to be bled, as, without that precaution, they apprehended bad consequences from the heat, which they had already began to feel. I consented to their request with so much the more willingness, as the precaution could not be hurtful to their health. The night was dark, without any appearance of the moon; but the vessel making great way, gave us spirits. At day-break the quartermaster called out land. I went on deck, and likewise mistook some low clouds for land; but sun-rise dissipated the charm. In the morning Mr. Meder bled fifteen of the associates.

According to the report, three sick, one wounded; the pump clear. Latitude in 43 degrees, 20 minutes; longitude in 9 degrees, 4 minutes. Wind north one quarter west; course west one quarter south.

Thursday, July 7. Very fine weather, and smooth water. The heat of the sun was such, that it melted the pitch off the sides of the vessel. I gave orders to pay it afresh, and to wet the decks and sides every morning at sun-rise. The heat of the sun being very troublesome, I cut up a sail to make an awning. This day we fitted out the shallop, and the company was employed in cleaning their arms, and making small cordage: the night was very fine. At nine, A. M. we saw something floating on the water, and immediately lowered the boat, and rowed towards it. The boats crew, on their return, brought another boat, very much damaged, and overfet. When we had got it on board, I observed that it was a small fishing boat, for I found some lines, made of twisted silk, still fastened to it. The company, after examining the boat, undertook to repair it, to serve in case of need. This day fifteen other associates were bled.

According

According to the report, three sick ; the wounded man able to come to work. Latitude in 42 degrees, 0 minutes ; longitude in 6 degrees, 38 minutes. Wind north-north-west ; course south-west one quarter south.

Friday, July 8. The wind gradually increasing, with fine weather, and the sun shining strong. This day we made a trial of the fish-bread ; we found it harsh, sour and very salt, but necessity obliged us to eat it. At sun-set, saw a great number of porpoises, but could catch none. The night was fine and clear, throughout. At day-break, four of the associates presented themselves, in the name of the company, to ask forgiveness, in favour of Mr. Stephanow ; and as I was assured of their fidelity to me, I promised to comply with their request, with so much more satisfaction, as I desired nothing more ardently than to convince the company how much I was devoted to their wishes. After their departure, I assembled a committee of the principal associates, to whom I declared my intention to receive Mr. Stephanow again into our society. They all consented to my resolution, except Mr. Panow, who declared that I should have more than one occasion, hereafter, to complain of this infamous man, for whom, as a relation, he had so much cause to blush. This day Mr. Meder bled twenty of the

According to the report, three sick ; the pump associates.

clear. Latitude in 41 degrees, 28 minutes ; longitude in 4 degrees, 26 minutes. Wind north-north-west ; course south-west one quarter west.

Saturday, July 9. Pursuant to my resolution, I caused Mr. Stephanow to be called, and acquainted him that he was forgiven, and received into our society ; at the same time that I exhorted him to desist, at length, from his enormity to me, and represented to him, that he ought not to doubt the sincerity with

with which I offered my friendship, as it was entirely in my power to clear myself of him. He appeared extremely satisfied, and promised, on his faith and honour, to conduct himself with more delicacy in future: he spared no oaths to confirm his repentance; and, as a final confirmation, he entreated me to assemble the whole company, before whom he was desirous of publickly acknowledging his fault, and demanding pardon. And though I excused myself, by observing, that I neither could nor ought to permit such a proceeding on his part; yet he persisted, and intreated those present to second his proposal; assuring them, that he should not enjoy any peace, until he had convinced the whole company that his heart and his words agreed. As I saw it was not in my power to change his resolution, I begged Mr. Crustiew to comply with Mr. Stephanow's demand.

After the departure of Mr. Crustiew with the penitent, I expressed my joy to Mr. Panow, to see his relation at length recalled to reason; but this gallant man assured me, that I should find myself deceived in my hopes, as he knew him too well to hope for amendment. He added, that he believed him, at that moment, to be truly disposed to keep his engagement; but that he would lay any wager, that, before eight days were expired, he would give new proofs of the wickedness of his disposition; for which reason, he strongly urged me never to place any confidence in such a wretch.

At five P. M. word was brought, that the hoops of one of the water casks had given way, and the water was entirely run out; and that another cask was two-thirds empty; so that no more than three casks and some pots of water remained, with about nine hundred pounds of fish dried, or in the form of bread. In a state of extreme anxiety, and extenuated by continual fatigue, I passed a cruel night;
and

and as it was necessary to conceal my uneasiness from the associates, this restraint overcame me to such a degree, that I was several times, during the night, ready to faint. There was no reason to hope for rain or dew, as the season unfortunately was dry; and I had no knowledge of the position of the neighbouring lands, upon which I could place any well-grounded expectation. At day-break I assembled the whole company, to give them an account of our situation, and to propose that they should be put to the allowance of half a pound of fish, and half a bottle of water a day; and in order to convince them of the truth of what I asserted, I caused the provision of fish to be brought upon deck, where, instead of nine hundred pounds, we unfortunately found only four hundred and sixty pounds; and upon examination, the water proved to be much less than three casks. This situation reduced them to despair, for they assured me that it would be impossible to support life on such an allowance of such food as the fish, which likewise produced extreme thirst. Their representations were but too true, as I knew by my own experience; and to prevent every dispute concerning the distribution, I divided our provision among all the associates, and every one received his part, consisting of about four pounds and three quarters; and I reserved the biscuit, though damaged, for the use of the women. Several of the associates received their provisions, weeping bitterly; and others cursed those who had led them to the revolution at Kamehatka.—Such was the scene which now presented itself before my eyes.

According to the report, six sick; the pump clear. Latitude in, 39 degrees, 40 minutes; longitude in, 5 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind south-west one quarter west; course south-south-east.

VOL. I.

Z

Sunday,

Sunday, July 10. Clear weather, and excessive hot; a strong breeze, but unsteady. At sun-set the wind freshened, and the clouds drove along with great swiftness. At eleven, P. M. it thundered, and the clouds broke; very little rain fell on board. At four, A. M. handed the small sails. The vessel lying along, made a considerable quantity of water; for this reason, I gave orders for covering the upper works with tarred sail cloth.

Latitude in, 38 degrees, 0 minutes; longitude in, 5 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind west-north-west; course south-west one quarter south.

Monday, July 11. A strong gale, and cloudy, with continual thunder and lightning. Prudence required us to lay to, but our situation did not admit of it; for this reason, I encouraged the associates to continue the service, but unfortunately they were all so disheartened, that I despaired of keeping the ship by the wind. A dreadful night succeeded this day, with every horrid circumstance that can be imagined at sea; the fore and mizen topails were at once blown from the yards, and the noise of the torn sails encreased the fears of the company. The wind encreased by sudden gusts, which threatened to dismast us entirely; and as none of the associates would go aloft, it was impossible to hand the topails. At three, A. M. the mizen mast was split by the lightning, but it did not take fire. The deck was constantly filled with water; and if the wind had changed with that rapidity which I have so often experienced in my navigation, we had been lost, without resource; happily, however, it continued in the same quarter.

According to the report, twenty-three sick; cleared the well from twenty-eight to six inches water. Latitude in, 36 degrees, 25 minutes; longitude in, 3 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind west-north-west; course south-west one quarter south.

Tuesday

Tuesday, July 12. Messrs. Crustiew and Panow represented to me, that several of the associates, having consumed their provisions, were in danger of perishing by hunger, if I did not find some expedient. They had already broke forth in exclamations of despair: being therefore obliged to apply my thoughts to the invention of an expedient, I fell upon that of boiling some skins of beavers, and seasoning them with whale oil. I communicated this idea to my friends, who received it with gratitude. To make a trial, I gave orders to scald and clean a skin, and then boil it. At six, P. M. it was entirely prepared; and when I found that this ragout was capable of preserving us from dying with hunger, I immediately distributed it to the associates. The eagerness with which they set about preparing their meal, made them forget the danger we were in from the impetuosity of the wind, and it was not possible to employ them in any other service on board; so that the whole care of the vessel fell upon me and the officers. Throughout the night the wind continued with unabated violence, and the swell of the sea began to threaten us with the last extreme of danger; when all at once, about four, A. M. its force slackened, and I was not a little surprized to perceive that the sea became smooth, almost immediately. This circumstance indicated the vicinity of land, but in what direction to seek it, was a thing impossible to be determined. At day-break my companions thanked me for having employed my thoughts in procuring them some nourishment; and as there was no other provision on board, I caused some skins to be dressed for the sick. Mr. Meder informed me, that several of the associates had washed their shoes and half boots, and that, at the instant he was speaking, there were more than twenty pair in the pot. In fact, this report was confirmed; and I could only

groan at the scene of misery, which, in the space of twenty-four hours, could not but be greatly increased by the want of water.

According to the report, twenty-nine sick; the pump clear, as usual. Latitude in, 35 degrees, 4 minutes; longitude in, 1 degree, 0 minutes. Wind west-north-west; course south-west one quarter south.

Wednesday, July 13. The weather clearing up gradually, with some intervals of sun-shine, I gave orders to open the hatches, to air the vessel; after which we cleared the wreck of the mizen mast, and bent another mizen stay sail, which had been carried away. To replace the mizen mast, I made use of a main topmast, which I had taken in exchange at Kamchatka; and, notwithstanding our weakness, we succeeded in getting it stepped before dark. During the time we were employed in this work, the women were busied in unpacking the skins. They consisted of seven hundred and eighty-two beavers, two hundred and sixty-eight foxes, and one thousand nine hundred fables, all which were distributed to the company. At day-break we discovered a great quantity of floating weeds, and saw birds which resembled eagles. This sight renewed in my mind that glimpse of hope, which alone enables us to surmount obstacles that appear invincible. About noon we observed the clouds become black to the southward, and we waited with impatience for a squall, to supply us with some provision of water. Our expectation, however, was deceived, for the wind remained steady.

According to the report, twenty sick; the pump clear as usual. Latitude in, 33 degrees, 50 minutes; longitude in, 358 degrees, 56 minutes. Wind west-north-west; course south-west.

Thursday, July 14. Clear hot weather; a strong and steady breeze, with a following swell. Mr. Meder informed me, that there were no more than
fifty

fifty pints of water on board, and that he thought it proper to keep at least half for the sick. I gave him orders accordingly, to reserve half, and the rest was distributed among the associates at day-break. For my own part, having no longer any expectation of means to remedy the want of water, I resigned myself to that fate, which overwhelmed me by such dreadful trials, and being no longer able to find any ground for hope, I passed the night in respiring the cool air. The break of day at last appeared, and the freshness of the morning revived me a little. At seven I assisted in the distribution of the water. My companions received it with avidity, and several among them drank it off at the instant; others, more careful, were attentive in preserving it. After the distribution, as I concluded it to be impossible that I should much longer support life, and finding myself oppressed with weakness, occasioned by hunger, I presented my chart to the company, and pointed out to them, that we were still two hundred and forty, or perhaps three hundred leagues from the coast of Japan; that I had no knowledge of any island near us, and that consequently six or seven days would be required to reach it, even with a favourable wind, of which there was no probable appearance; and as I did not apprehend that I could support life for such a length of time, in our present circumstances, I thought it proper to point out to them the course they might hold, in case they should be so happy as to survive. This natural confidence with which I opened my sentiments to them, affected them strongly, and it was not without the most forcible emotions, that I beheld them all eager to offer me a part of their lots. On this occasion, Sudiakow declared, that he still had three salt fish in his chest, which he offered me, as well as a pitcher of water, which he had saved out of his own allowance. This noble action

was

was universally applauded, and he received the fir-
name of Generous, which the company gave him.
Being forced to accept this assistance, I consented,
on condition of his sharing it with me. When I
took the meridian altitude, the company requested
me to direct my course to Japan.

According to the report, eighteen sick; the pump
clear, as usual. Latitude in, 32 degrees, 36 minutes,
longitude in, 357 degrees, 15 minutes. Wind from
north-west to north-north-west; course south-south-
west.

Friday, July 15. Fine weather, with the sun
shining strongly; a current setting to the westward.
Saw a number of birds, among which we supposed
some to be land birds, which gave new hopes to the
company. Several on board having drank the sea
water, were seized with a violent vomiting. Mr.
Meder attempted to correct the sea water, by in-
fusing tea in it; but this precaution did not deprive
it of its bitterness. I made a trial of it myself.

At sun-set, two of the company from the mast-
head cried out land. Every one immediately hur-
ried aloft; but the sun being set, they could see
nothing. The men who thought they saw the land,
informed me, that it lay a little to the southward of
west; I therefore set all the sails, and ordered a
strong night watch; but having sailed from the
time they thought they saw the land, till four in the
morning, over a space of twenty-four leagues and
three quarters, they were convinced that they had
taken the clouds for the land. At five, A. M.
nothing was seen from the mast-head but very
thick clouds before us. At this time my dog,
Nestor, stood on the fore-castle, continually barking,
and snuffing up the air. Mr. Meder observing this
circumstance, ran to me, and assured me, that he no
longer doubted of the vicinity of the land, as he
knew it to be usual for dogs to smell it. Mr.

Kuzneczow

Kuzneczow himself went to the top-mast-head, swearing that he would not come down until he saw the land. At eight he called out land, but a moment after, cried that he had mistaken clouds for the land. At nine, Saccharie, my American, looking out a-head with the rest, called out, Alakfina, Alakfina, and pulled me towards the fore-castle, saying in Russian, of which he had learned some few words, "Come along." When I came on the fore-castle, he shewed me the place with his finger, continually repeating Alakfina, though none of us could discover any thing. I called out to Mr. Kuzneczow, informing him, that the American saw land; but Kuzneczow replied, that he saw nothing. I therefore sent Saccharie to the mast-head, to shew him the place, and sent up my telescope. At half past nine, Mr. Kuzneczow at last called out land. On his assurance, I went up myself, and had the pleasure to see, at last, the prospect of our sufferings being mitigated. At eleven, the land being evident before us, I sounded, and got ground in twenty-eight fathoms; and after sailing within a quarter of a league of the coast, we anchored in fourteen fathoms.

According to the report, twenty-six sick; the pump clear. Latitude in, 32 degrees, 47 minutes; longitude in, 355 degrees, 8 minutes. Wind north one quarter west; course west 5 degrees north.

Saturday, July 16. At anchor, near an island, at one quarter of a league distance, in eighteen fathom water. Wind from north to north-north-west. At two, P. M. sent Messrs. Panow and Kuzneczow ashore, with twelve associates in the canoe, to examine the coast, and endeavour to find some harbour, in which we might moor in safety. I sent several casks likewise, that they might bring some water. At nine we saw three fires on shore, which were the signal of the discovery of an harbour; but the fires appeared to us to be two leagues distant

to

to the north-west of our anchorage. At eleven the boat returned with four men, and some water, which was eagerly consumed. Sibaew informed me, that Kuzneczow had discovered a very commodious bay, on the northern side of the island, into which fell a rivulet of fresh water; and that he begged I would send back the boat, that he might return, at day-break, and conduct the vessel to her moorings. This happy news was very comfortable to every one on board; but the continuation of his narrative was still more satisfactory, when he assured me, that there was a quantity of hogs and goats on the island. At this recital every one was desirous of going on shore; and it was with the greatest difficulty that I could retain a few of them on board to work the ship. The associates, attending only to their own wants, seized the shallop, and departed, to the number of forty-nine. After the departure of the shallop, I sent the small boat likewise, armed with six men, to obey the orders of Mr. Kuzneczow.

At a quarter past five, A. M. weighed, and made sail under the topails. At six, saw the small boat out at sea, and continued my course along the coast, north-west one quarter north; the prospect on shore was very agreeable. At eight it became calm, and I was obliged to anchor again in twelve fathoms. At the same time I gave orders to Mr. Kuzneczow to go in search of the shallop, that they might return, and tow the vessel in. At half past nine the shallop and canoe arrived, and I entered the bay, in which I moored in six fathom water, and at the distance of sixty fathoms from the shore. One of our cables was fastened on the shore, and the sheet anchor was down, at the distance of one hundred and twenty fathoms to seaward.

According to the report, eighteen sick; the pump clear. Latitude in, 32 degrees, 47 minutes; longitude

tude in, 355 degrees, eight minutes. Wind north the first part, afterwards calm; course west, 5 degrees north and north-west.

Sunday, July 17. Sent the sick and the women on shore, leaving only four men and two officers on board, as a guard. Employed this day in cutting wood, and erecting huts and tents, as well as a storehouse, to land our whole cargo. Mr. Wynbladth undertook to raise a battery, in which he placed two three-pounders. The associates, who had gone on shore the day before, brought several pieces of game for the sick; and a goat; others brought different fruits and plants, of a delicious taste. I forbid them, however, to eat them raw; but when boiled or roasted, they proved very good and wholesome. The abundance of water, and plenty of provisions, soon made the company forget their past sufferings; and their conversation ran entirely on the happy and comfortable situation before them. For my part, I rejoiced at the event, which had delivered me from the horrors of a cruel death, and the reproaches of my companions.

The night was fine, but the beauty of the sky did not prevent me from employing the whole in sleep; for my frame, exhausted with fatigue and watching, had need of rest. At day-break, I assembled the whole company, to appoint the different services. Some received orders to guard the vessel; others were employed in the fishery, in the chase, or in setting up the water butts; repairing the sails, &c. After this distribution of their labours, I declared my intention, that, as soon as we had made up our provisions, I would set sail for Manilla, on the Phillipine islands, from whence we might most easily return into Europe. My declaration was received with great coolness, and the company replied, that they had need of repose, in the first place; and afterwards,

afterwards, they would consider what steps were the best to be taken.

According to the report, eighteen sick.

Monday, July 18. On shore, on the island of Liquor; a name which my companions gave to this island, on account of the excellent water they found here. At two, P. M. Loginow, who had been sent to discover the interior part of the island, with four associates, returned, and brought pine apples and bananas, in great quantities, with several bundles of wood, with which, he assured me, the island abounded. But that which excited the greatest astonishment was some pieces of rock crystals, and stones, containing metallic particles, which were very heavy, and shone like gold. The sight of the crystal inflamed the imagination of my associates: they began to reason upon the circumstances, and concluded, that as the surface of the earth produced crystal, it doubtless contained diamonds at a greater depth. The mineral they had found, could be nothing, in their opinion, but gold. It was to no purpose that I represented, that appearances were often fallacious; that rock crystal would not change into diamonds; and that the pretended ore of gold, might be nothing more than marcasite. My representations were not attended to; the illusion had taken too strong hold of their minds, to be dissipated in as short a time as it was formed; and the vivacity with which the associates had made their resolutions, gave me reason to apprehend serious consequences. Five of them presented themselves to declare, that the associates, being worn out with the fatigue and sufferings they had experienced during their voyage, had determined to fix their abode upon the island for some months; and that with so much the greater readiness, as they found sufficient abundance of provisions; and that, during this whole time, they meant to employ themselves in digging

digging into the earth, to collect a quantity of ore, and blow up the rocks with a view of coming at the basis of the crystal, that they might collect a quantity of gold and diamonds, which would be useful to them on their return to Europe. They accompanied this declaration with oaths, that they were determined not to change their resolution; and they demanded, that I would give them my promise to conform to their will; but as I did not think proper to give my word immediately, I dismissed them with a promise, that I would consider of their propositions, and give them my final answer the next morning.

After their departure, I assembled my friends, to deliberate upon the steps proper to be taken. They advised me to submit to the pleasure of the company, as the law of the strongest; and represented to me, that the associates, being on shore, would listen to no reason: and as I was well acquainted with their obstinacy, I had every reason to expect they would come to extremities. Their advice gave me no consolation; for, by yielding to the will of the company, I had nothing to expect but intrigues and cabals, the issue of which might be of fatal consequences to my party. I therefore passed the night in contriving projects to bring them to their senses.

At day-break I found my tent surrounded with the associates, who demanded my resolution. My friends kept at a distance, to assist me in case of need. In this situation, I thought it best to represent to them, that I had determined to have the ore examined, to be convinced whether it contained gold or not; for I thought it would be very absurd to give ourselves the trouble of collecting stones, without deriving any advantage from them. I therefore requested my companions to nominate two amongst themselves, who understood metallurgy,
to

to make the assay ; and at the same time declared to them, that in case the ore turned out productive, I would immediately determine to remain upon the island, as long as they thought proper : but that the discovery of the crystal would avail us nothing, as I was assured that crystal was never found in diamond mines. The associates were so firmly persuaded that the ore could be nothing else but gold, that they were satisfied with my answer ; and deputed Andreanow and Ribnikow, two goldsmiths, to make the assay. It was with the greatest satisfaction that I gained so far on the minds of such a number of headstrong people. My friends complimented me upon my success ; and Mr. Panow assured me, that he would do every thing in his power to destroy the cabal, which he supposed to be the work of Mr. Stephanow.

According to the report, fourteen sick.

Tuesday, July 19. Fine calm weather, but excessively hot. This day a large quantity of fish was brought, half of which I caused to be dried, for our provision, and the other half was distributed among the company. Mr. Baturin informing me, that our stock of salt was considerably diminished, proposed to make a boiling ; I gave him three Kamchadales to assist him. About two, I made an excursion into the country, in company with Mr. Panow and Mr. Wynbladth : we found it very agreeable, and abounding with cocoa nuts, orange and banana trees, with a certain fruit which resembled pears, but as they were too acid, we did not eat them. On one of the small hills, we found several pieces of crystal, and of cinnabar ; but the most agreeable discovery we made, consisted in the sight of about fifty hogs. We followed them, with a view of killing some ; when the young pilot, Potossow, came to inform me, that Mr. Stephanow had assembled a party of the associates, to whom he had spoken with emphasis, and that they

they had all retired into the wood, to make an oath. Upon this information, we returned towards our camp, where we arrived at the beginning of the night, which was one of the most beautiful I ever beheld: the sky was without a cloud, and the stars shone with a brilliancy and lustre that was delightful to behold. I first directed my steps towards the tent of Mr. Crustiew, who was surprized to hear the relation of my discovery; and assured me, throughout the whole day, he had not quitted Stephanow, except for half an hour, which appeared to him to be too short a time to form a confederacy: but Mr. Panow assured him that Mr. Stephanow was capable of any thing; and that he believed him to be guilty. The former behaviour of the man led me to adopt the opinion of Mr. Panow; and I thought proper to take measures to prevent a plot. With this intention, I assembled those friends to whom I could speak with confidence; their number amounted to thirty-six persons. I immediately detached six on board, to relieve those in the vessel; twelve others were disposed to guard our small pieces on shore, and the rest remained under arms, to keep a regular guard, without affording any cause of suspicion. Things being thus disposed, I waited for day-break. At seven in the morning, the hunters were the first who presented themselves, to inform me that they had been unsuccessful, and had seen nothing; though I was well assured that they had been with Stephanow, instead of following the chace. I concealed my displeasure; but could hold no longer, when I heard that all those, whom I had appointed to repair our casks and sails, had refused to continue their work. I therefore gave orders for a general meeting to be held at noon.

According to the report, eight sick.

Wednesday, July 20. Weather as yesterday. The company being assembled, I explained our situation,

situation, in strong terms; and the pains which I had constantly taken to satisfy the desires of the company. I complained of their ingratitude towards me, which was shewn in a new mutiny. I took notice of the obstinacy of the people not to work, which would lead us to the most dreadful necessity; and I demanded the reasons which had led them to a resolution so unworthy of men of spirit and honour. Several of the associates pointed out Mr. Stephanow, and cried out, "Speak" "and we will support you." Upon this signal the wretch spoke, by loading me with invectives, and threatening both myself and Mr. Panow with speedy death. I interrupted him in his imprecations, and made a speech, in which I thanked the associates for having hitherto shared my labours. I declared that I had preserved the command over them for no other reason than to preserve their lives, in a voyage of great danger and difficulty; but that, at present, as the greatest dangers were past, I should entirely surrender the command; and that they had nothing to do, but chuse a chief. With respect to myself, I informed them, that as I had nothing more to hope from men so destitute of honour and probity, I was determined to quit them, and live rather with the wild beasts, than among a set of ungrateful men, whose future conduct could not fail to be made up of crimes and wickedness. After this discourse, I retired; saying, "Let those" "who have affection and attachment follow me." I was followed by those whose attachment I knew, and by twenty-two others, who had appeared, till then, doubtful. On my return into my tent, I found myself with fifty-two companions, besides six on board. I had nothing, therefore, to fear from the conspirators, and employed the night in deliberating what was best to be done. At day-break,

break, I was informed of the arrival of deputies from Stephanow's party; who informed me, that having made themselves master of the vessel, they had it in their power to abandon me; but that their designs were more noble, as they assured me, that they would acknowledge me for their chief and king, provided I would promise to remain upon the island with them; and that, to convince me that they were not come to impose upon me, three of their party would remain with me; and the company, as soon as they should be informed of my resolution, would put Mr. Stephanow into my hands, that I might have nothing to fear on his part. The surprize of the vessel, filled me with consternation; but I concealed it as well as I could. My disgrace appeared inevitable; for what could I do upon a desert island without a vessel? For this reason, in order to recover some influence over these headstrong people, I invited them to a meeting, at which I promised to discover the sentiments of my mind. The company immediately assembled, excepting Mr. Stephanow with ten associates, who were on board. I then represented to them, that no one among them could be more truly desirous of fixing his residence on this happy island, than myself, but that various reflections prevented me from adopting this resolution, and in order to shew them that they were well-founded, I declared to them, that our company consisting of a great number of men, and only eight women, the disproportion would hinder our union; and that, in fact, it was merely this want of women which had prevented me from making the proposal to them of fixing our residence upon the island: But at length, as I saw they had taken their resolution, I would acquiesce in their wishes, upon one single condition. Hereupon, they all cried out, "Hear, hear." I then declared, that my intention was to sail for Japan, and there make a descent near

a town

a town, from which we would carry off as many women as we could seize, together with cattle and grain. I concluded, by protesting, that if they would engage to second me in this project, I would promise to settle with them upon the island, to which we might easily return, and that one month would be sufficient for carrying the project into execution. I had scarcely finished my declaration, before they all exclaimed, "Long live our Chief, long live our General;" and they came one after the other to kiss my hand.

Finding them brought to this point of submission, I required them to go on board, and bring Stephanow on shore; for I declared my apprehension, lest that madman might end his exploits by setting fire to the vessel. This fear took such instantaneous hold of their minds, that they ran with the greatest precipitation to the landing-place. Stephanow seeing his party run, supposed them to be attacked by my people, and came on shore to join them; but he was strangely surprized, when his own party seized him, and brought him to me, where I confined him under the guard of Mr. Sibaew.

According to the report, four sick, and one prisoner.

Thursday, July 21. A light breeze from the eastward, and fine weather. I assembled the company, to renew their oath of fidelity and obedience towards me; at the same time that I made oath, that, after having carried our enterprize upon Japan into execution, I would return to the island of Liquor, to make the settlement of our company. After this ceremony, I gave orders for continuing the works, the chase, fishery, and collecting of fruits and vegetables, for our voyage. With regard to Mr. Stephanow, I released him from confinement, on condition that he should publickly beg pardon of all the company; but as it was no longer con-

convenient that I should entrust him with any part of the service, I contrived that the company should declare him incapable of holding any employ. This unhappy man requested me to leave him upon the island, but I refused to comply with the suggestions of his despair, by representing to him, that I hoped to mitigate his disgrace, when we should return again to the island, for I durst not acquaint him with my real intentions. My clemency astonished him, and he acknowledged himself guilty, &c. The associates being delighted with the project of forming a new colony, which might hereafter become an empire, worked all night, and, as Mr. Panow informed me, entirely neglected the assay of the ore, with the firm intention of performing that part of their scheme upon their return. The night was clear and fresh, and the whole company in good health. The fish we caught were very good, and wholesome, and our meals were diversified with excellent fruits and game. Mr. Panow, having taken with him six good marksmen, went out to shoot hogs. At day-break I found the associates still at work; and our business went on with spirit.

At nine, I gave orders to carry all our provisions on board, and eighteen casks, which had been set up and filled with water. Mr. Baturin having taken an account of our provisions, shewed that we were very well stored for one month. This day I gave orders to erect a cross, with the following inscription:—

“ In the year 1771, on the 16th of July, the
 “ corvette St. Peter and St. Paul, anchored in the
 “ harbour of this island, commanded by Maurice
 “ Auguste de Benyowszky, Magnate of Hungary
 “ and Poland, General of the Republic of Poland;
 “ made prisoner of war by the Russians, and exiled,
 “ by order of the Czarina, to Kamchatka, from
 “ whence he had the good fortune to make his
 VOL. I. A a “ escape,

“escape, by the force of his courage. This island
 “is not inhabited: it abounds with different wild
 “fowl; the sea affords excellent fish, and its fruits
 “and water are wholesome. It is situated in 32
 “degrees, 47 minutes latitude, and 355 degrees,
 “8 minutes longitude, from Bolsha, in Kamchatka.”

According to the report, one sick.

Friday, July 22. Mr. Panow, on his return from the chase, brought us two boars, and several pintado birds. We salted the flesh, and carried it on board. At four, our effects being on board, and the wind freshening from the eastward, I determined to raise our camp, and give orders for our embarkation: at nine in the evening all the people were on board; we were employed till eleven in unmooring, and exactly at midnight I set sail, the weather being very clear, and the wind blowing fresh from the eastward. We got out of the harbour with difficulty; but when once we had doubled the point, we had a calm sea, and as fine a wind as we could wish, with which we sailed pleasantly along. Finding myself at length under sail, and having nothing more to fear, I had a quiet sleep. At day-break the land was out of sight, and gaiety prevailed among the associates, who did not seem disposed to make any complaints on the want of provisions or water.

According to the report, one sick. Latitude in, 32 degrees, 56 minutes north; longitude in, 353 degrees, 57 minutes. Wind east; no current; course west 5 degrees north.

Saturday, July 23. Fine hot weather, with a fresh breeze from east-north-east, and a long swell; the sea yellowish, and entirely changed in colour, which induced me to sound, but we found no bottom. At five, saw a double rainbow. The associates complaining of excessive thirst, I caused them to put nitre in their drink, which they had composed of fruits boiled in water.

Accord-

According to the report, one sick; the pump cleared. Latitude in, 33 degrees, 13 minutes north; longitude in, 352 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind east-north-east; current from the southward; course west-north-west 5 degrees west.

Sunday, July 24. Excessive hot weather, inclined to squally, the wind becoming irregular, and by sudden puffs changing from east to north; a swell from north-west. At six, saw land, which we perceived to be an island, and sailed round it, to the northward. In the night the wind fixed at the north-east, and continued fresh. This day, perceiving that all our rigging was slack, I caused it to be set up.

According to the report, all well; the pump clear. Latitude in, 33 degrees, 27 minutes north; longitude in, 349 degrees, 34 minutes. Wind north-east; current from south to north; course west one quarter north.

Monday, July 25. The heat increasing, and the wind continuing with the same force. Saw a number of black serpents along-side. At four, P. M. saw several bushes floating along-side, several of which we hooked in; a piece of silk was fastened to one of them. This discovery convinced me that we were near Japan; but as I found no bottom, I inferred that we were in the Archipelago of islands, which surrounds Japan. I therefore kept a good look out in the night; luckily, however, we met with no obstacle. At day-break, the men at the mast-head called out land, but we could not perceive it from the deck till between nine and ten; and afterwards, as our course led us right towards it, we saw it very distinctly at noon.

According to the report, all well; the pump clear. Latitude in, 33 degrees, 28 minutes north; longitude in, 347 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind east-north-east; current south; course west.

A a 2

Tuesday,

Tuesday, July 26th. Very fine weather, with a hot sun. Made sail for the north cape of the island, which we soon passed. The associates requested me to permit them to land, the first opportunity, in order to examine those islands, which might probably be inhabited. I promised to satisfy their desire, and that with so much the more readiness, as it was of essential consequence to examine the neighbouring coasts, of which I had no positive chart with me, except a few positions of head-lands, which I procured out of different collections, at Kamchatka. At half past three, P. M. Mr. Kuzneczow, being at the mast-head, called out a sail, and soon after four; and, in a short time, he declared that a great number were in sight. I immediately went aloft, with a perspective glass, and saw that it was a fleet; among which I perceived three large vessels, and that the whole were standing to the north-west. The approach of night prevented my reaching this fleet. We handed the lower sails, to be in readiness to come to; and in the night I advanced, with the lead constantly out; but at three, A. M. we set all our sails, and at six low land appeared in sight, a-head. At nine, being at the distance of no more than two leagues, I stood off and on, and sent the small boat, with Mr. Kuzneczow and six associates, to make discoveries upon the island.

According to the report, all in good health; the ship near an island. Latitude in, 33 degrees, 41 minutes; longitude in, 345 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind north-east; current from the southward; course west one quarter north.

Wednesday, July 27. Upon approaching the island, the current drove us to the westward, near seven leagues in five hours. I fired several guns, as a signal for the small boat to return, but not seeing

ing her, I came to anchor, at three, P. M. in forty-eight fathoms. The boat did not return till eight. Mr. Kuzneczow informed me, that the island was not inhabited, but that he had found several huts, built of planks, round which he saw a quantity of fish bones, whence he inferred that the Japanese frequented this island only for the purpose of fishing. The night being clear and star-light, weighed anchor precisely at midnight, with a light breeze, and smooth water. At four, A. M. saw an island on the larboard hand, and at six another land on the starboard. I directed my course through the channel, and about eleven was in the midst of the channel. At noon I caused a sketch * to be taken of the northern extremity of the island, which bore south-east, and the land on the starboard, which bore from north to north-west.

According to the report, all well; the ship in good condition. Latitude in, 33 degrees, 44 minutes north; longitude in, 343 degrees, 12 minutes. Wind north-east one quarter east; current from the south, course, west by north; depth of water thirty-eight fathoms.

Thursday, July 22. Very fine weather, but hot; an irregular sea, with a strong current from south-east to north-west. At one, P. M. saw another land to the south-west, and I resolved to continue my course through the channel, with the boat a-head, and the lead constantly going. At five, saw three vessels, at the distance of four leagues a-head, standing across the streights, from south to north. In the night we saw fires on all the coasts. A. M. made sail, and at day-break we entered a bay; and as the lead shewed that the bottom was regular, I stood in for the shore, with so much the greater safety, as the current was against us. At eight our soundings were sixteen fathoms, coral rock, and

* These have not come to the hand of the editor.

sand. Our vessel appeared to be in the midst of a forest, for there were near one thousand vessels around us, who were busied in the fishery, without giving themselves any trouble at sight of us. Several of them passing near us, cried out, *Fiaffi to Holland, Fiaffi to Sindzi*; and the others cried out, *Namandabuz*. At eleven, a vessel, very neatly built, approached and hailed us: her masts were ornamented with streamers, and several colours, upon which I perceived some inscriptions; but as we were at a loss to reply to the captain in the Japanese language, he at last sent us his yawl, with cordage, and by the gesticulations of his sailors, we comprehended that he meant to assist in towing us. I immediately passed the ends of two hawsers on board the yawl which carried them on board their own vessel; they immediately lowered their sails, and by means of upwards of eighty rowers, they towed us along with incredible swiftness. When we came near the shore, I anchored in twelve fathoms, at the same time casting off the hawsers, which were brought back by the Japanese yawl, none of whose people would consent to come on board; and when I was desirous of making them some return, they refused, at the same time pointing to their necks, doubtless by way of letting me know that they durst not accept any thing, under pain of death.

According to the report, all well; at anchor in a bay at Japan. By estimate, latitude in, 33 degrees, 56 minutes north; longitude in, 342 degrees, 20 minutes. Wind north-east one quarter east; no current; at anchor in twelve fathoms; off shore three quarters of a league.

Friday, July 29. In a bay on the coast of Japan; fine weather, but excessive hot. Wind variable from north-east to south-east, and a strong tide. Gave orders for immediately preparing our arms for service, and loading our cannon with grape-shot,

shot, to be ready in case we should be attacked, as my companions pretended. At two, P. M. ordered Messrs. Wynbladth and Kuzneczow on shore, with twelve armed men. Mr. Wynbladth was charged with a letter, written in Dutch, containing a declaration respecting my voyage, and a request for a supply of provisions. With the letter I sent three beaver skins, and six martens, as a present to the chief of the place; but as I did not think proper to expose my people to the mercy of the inhabitants, I weighed, and towed the vessel, by means of the shallop, to the distance of two hundred fathoms from the shore, where I anchored in five and one-half fathoms, fine sand. Soon after we saw three small boats row towards ours, and afterwards followed them on shore. The interposition of a rock, prevented us from seeing their landing, which gave me great uneasiness. My uneasiness increased every hour, as I saw no one return till nine at night, when the centinel called out, that he observed three fires approaching the vessel. Having seen the appearance myself, I armed the shallop with sixteen men, and sent them upon discovery. They soon returned, and Mr. Panow, who was commanding officer, called out, that our boat was on its return, attended by two boats of the country, and that our people appeared joyful. Soon after, we heard Mr. Kuzneczow, who called out to us to throw them three ropes; which being immediately done, Mr. Wynbladth came on board, with a Japanese, very well cloathed, and armed with a sabre. He came on board with confidence, and made a long harangue, every word of which was perfectly unintelligible to me. In order, however, that I might comprehend some part of it, I sent for Bocsfarew, who had learned this language during the space of three years, at Irkuczk, in Siberia, from a Japanese, who had escaped shipwreck at Kamchatka, and after being taught the Russian language, at Moscow, was maintained

maintained by the senate to teach Japanese to the Siberians. Unfortunately it turned out that Bocfarew had forgotten most part, and remembered only a few compliments, with which he regaled the Japanese. But as I was anxious to know the report of Messrs. Wynbladth and Kuzneczow, I con- signed the Japanese to Messrs. Panow and Bocfarew, who introduced him into my cabin. The follow- ing was the report of Mr. Wynbladth:—

“ As soon as we were joined by the Japanese
“ boats, who came to meet us, they made a sign by
“ placing each his left hand on his breast; we did
“ the same; and after this ceremony, the Japanese
“ made a thousand other signs, none of which we
“ understood, excepting that they wished us to go
“ on shore. I went on shore, with eight associates,
“ leaving four in the boat, to keep her afloat.
“ We there found two hundred men on horse-
“ back, and an equal number on foot, armed with
“ bows and lances, who likewise saluted us politely;
“ but perceiving that we were desirous of repairing
“ to the town or village we saw before us, they
“ offered us horses; we mounted, and were thus
“ conducted, in ceremony, to a castle at the ex-
“ tremity of a village, which is about one quarter
“ of a league distant from the landing place. Here
“ we dismounted, and were introduced into the
“ court, in which we were very politely received
“ by a person of distinction, who conducted us
“ into an extensive hall, built on columns. Here
“ we found another great man, seated on a sofa,
“ who said to us *Fiaffi guzarimas*, which we did
“ not understand, and therefore we only saluted
“ him, and made a sign that we did not compre-
“ hend him. The second words he spoke were,
“ *To Golland*, which I understood, and made a sign
“ that we were not Hollanders. Afterwards he
“ said *To Sindzi*, to which, upon my making a sign
“ that

“ that I did not understand him, he continued his
 “ questions; *To Pilipine, To Braki, To Masuj, To Tun-*
 “ *gusi*; and as I had always answered in the negative,
 “ he beat a drum which was near him. Upon this
 “ signal several servants entered, to whom he gave
 “ orders, and immediately afterwards they returned
 “ with books and rolls of papers; he unrolled them,
 “ one after the other, and having at last found
 “ what he wanted, he made signs for me to ap-
 “ proach, which I did. He then shewed me a chart,
 “ in which I distinguished Japan, China, the Phil-
 “ pine Islands, the Indies, and a tract of unknown
 “ land, nearly occupying the space and position of
 “ Europe. He took my finger, and directed me
 “ to place it on the map. I comprehended that
 “ he sought for the country from which we came.
 “ I shewed him Europe, which astonished him very
 “ much. He shewed his surprize, by crying out,
 “ *Namandabez* several times; and afterwards, as he
 “ seemed to doubt what he had learned, I availed
 “ myself of the assistance of the chart, and made
 “ signs to inform him, that the duration of our
 “ voyage, and the hard weather we had experienced,
 “ had exhausted us, and that we were in want of
 “ provisions. He seemed to comprehend me, and
 “ made a sign, by pointing to his mouth and his
 “ belly; after which he called his servants, and
 “ spoke with them a considerable time. For my
 “ part, being desirous of hastening my return, I
 “ presented to him the beaver skins, and the mar-
 “ tens, making a sign that they came from you, and
 “ that I was only the bearer, at the same time that
 “ I presented the letter, which he accepted, but he
 “ would not receive the presents; and as I recol-
 “ lected that the Japanese in the boats had refused
 “ our offers, by making the sign of pointing to their
 “ necks, I imitated them. This great man then
 “ conducted me into a neighbouring chamber,
 “ where

“ where I found a woman, to whom I gave the
 “ present, and she gave me a basket filled with
 “ flowers which I have brought with me.

“ After coming out of this chamber, we found
 “ a gentleman in the hall, to whom the chief of
 “ the castle likewise spoke a long time, and then
 “ dismissed us. This gentleman became our con-
 “ ductor, and led us back, with the same escort, to
 “ the landing place, where we found two boats
 “ filled with provisions, which we have brought on
 “ board. The gentleman came in our boat, and
 “ is the same who is now on board.”

After having heard this account, I entered into my cabin, to shew civilities to the Japanese officer, and to gain his favour, I presented him with two pair of fables. The present appeared to him to be considerable, for he made us understand that he should be contented with one; but, at last, finding himself pressed to accept the whole, he shewed, by signs, that it was of consequence, that the present should be kept a secret, and he concealed the skins, by carefully wrapping them up.

When he came again upon deck, he gave orders for unloading the boats, which was done in a moment, after which he took his leave, and would not permit us to make the smallest present to the boatmen.

The provisions received on board, consisted of twenty-five sacks of rice, four pots of soft sugar, four jars of tea, one jar of tobacco very finely cut, eight hogs, sixteen jars of preserved fruits, a quantity of onions, oranges, lemons, pine-apples, and other fruits, two casks of salt fish, six casks of a very agreeable kind of wine, and about fifty fowls; but that which afforded the greatest pleasure to my companions, was the sight of three barrels of very strong spirits.

Day.

Day-break surprized us in our labour of hoisting these good things on board. The wind, during the whole night, blew from the south, and in the morning, we had a slight breeze from the northward, which, however, did not last above half an hour. At six I saw a boat arrive, called, in the language of the country, periaqua, with three men. They came along side, and put a young man on board, who was very handsomely cloathed, and, by his gestures, appeared desirous of conversing with me; but as it was impossible for me to comprehend him, I caused Bocfarew to be awakened, who, after many explanations, informed me, that the Japanese came to acquaint me, that a great number of people were desirous of seeing the vessel, but that they were afraid of the cannon, called in Japanese tippo. I informed him, as well as Bocfarew could, that every one would be welcome, and, in order that he might positively understand me, I caused the tompions to be put into the guns in his sight, upon which he made an infinity of salutations and at last retired. After his departure, I gave orders to wash and clean the vessel for the reception of the company who might come, and we had scarcely ended this work, when at nine o'clock we saw three boats rowing towards us. In each of these boats we observed a person of distinction with a parasol. Mr. Wynbladth informed me, that he had seen one of these writing with the lord of the castle. As soon as they came along-side, they came on board, and we saluted them by repeating the words *siaffi guzarimaz*. Bocfarew being appointed to serve as my interpreter, was well cloathed, and followed my instructions with wonderful accuracy, for, at every word he spoke, he made the most profound bows. Indeed, I am of opinion, that his greatest merit consisted in this ceremonial, for it was impossible for me to gather any information by virtue of his skill in interpreting.

But

But as I clearly understood, that the Japanese meant to testify their friendship, I gave myself very little concern about the rest. With a view, therefore, to add strength to their good intentions, I took them aside, and gave each two marten's skins, which they received with infinite joy, and a great many complimentary marks of acknowledgment. This proceeding seemed to have done us great service in their opinions. After the presents were received, they informed me that they were desirous of seeing the vessel, I, therefore, conducted them myself every where. One among them being provided with a pencil and paper, formed different characters, and when he returned upon deck, he examined the cannon, and wrote again upon his paper, no doubt an account of their number; after which he was desirous of knowing how many we were on board, which he soon learned, for I had brought all my people on the quarter-deck. He counted them all, and wrote down their number; but when they perceived that there were women on board, their curiosity was extreme. They behaved with great delicacy, and signified by their signs, that our female companions must have suffered much; after which they departed. About eleven, A. M. we received two boats of provisions, and a portrait, together with twenty-six casks of water and two of spirits; the boatmen, as soon as their lading was hoisted out, refused to receive any thing from us, and departed. A light breeze from the southward.

According to the report, one sick. At anchor in the Bay Ufilpatchar.

Saturday, July 30. Though I was extremely desirous to go on shore, my companions would not consent, but requested me to defer my intention, because the good disposition of the natives could not be depended upon. This day the people were employed

ployed in setting up the rigging. At three, P. M. we saw thirty boats rowing towards us with streamers flying, and when they came near, we heard the sound of different instruments and singing. All the vessels stopped at the distance of half a cable, except three that came along-side. Out of one of the boats an old man came on board with two boys richly cloathed. The old man presented a written paper to me, which, however was usefess, as I had no one on board who could read the Japanese writing: for this reason, I sent for the Sieur Bocfarew, who, after having caused the old man to repeat his words at least twenty times, informed me, that the Ulikamhy, or King, sent me these two youths as hostages, in order that I might come to him with confidence. I answered, and shewed by signs, that I was ready to go on shore, but that I would not permit the hostages to remain on board, because I had the greatest confidence in their Ulikamhy. I immediately gave orders to man the small boat, and went on board with four associates, the Sieur Bocfarew, and the old man, with the two boys, leaving the command to Mr. Crustiew. When we came near the fleet of small boats, all the Japanese called out Uli Ulan, and immediately preceded us, and the others followed three and three at an equal distance.

As soon as we came on shore, carpets were spread for myself and companions to sit on; immediately after which, tea and preserved fruits were presented to me. Litters were then brought, on which we were carried about a quarter of a league, followed by an armed troop, and conducted by thirteen officers. We were set down opposite a spacious garden, at the gate of which stood two Japanese centinels, who cried out Uli Ulan. As soon as we had entered the garden, we were received by two gentlemen richly cloathed, who first spoke to our old man, and afterwards saluted me by three profound

found inclinations. After this ceremony, they took me by the arms, and conducted me towards a small house, built in the middle of the garden. When we came near the house, the gentlemen made me understand that Ulikamhy was in the house, where, in fact, we found him in the saloon seated on a yellow sofa. His cloathing was green and blue silk, with a yellow girdle. Immediately after I had saluted him, a sofa was likewise brought me, of a red colour, upon which I sat down. Ulikamhy proposed three questions, who I was? whence I came? and for what reason I had come to Nipou? I replied, by the assistance of Bocfarew, that I was a warrior of Europe, arrived at Japan by accident, and the impetuosity of the weather; but as Ulikamhy could not well comprehend my interpreter, he bethought himself of using the assistance of painters, who having taken paper and pencils, painted figures, by which he informed me of the objects he was desirous of speaking of. The first picture which he presented to me contained my portrait, very little resembling me, it must be confessed, but distinguishable by my cloaths, and that of Ulikamhy, who presented me a heart. To shew that I understood the explanation, I pressed the figure of Ulikamhy to my breast, who being very well contented, caused me to come near and join hands with him. He then spoke a short time to his people, who soon after caused my four associates to come in, whom I had selected expressly. Their size and tallness surprized him, and he ordered them to be measured, and their portraits to be taken, which was done in an instant, for the figures were merely sketched out. By his gestures and signs, I understood that he wished to know why I was shorter than my people. In answer I caused a low stool to be brought to support my right foot, and then he saw me in my natural height, which

which likewise was some surprize to him. It was with much difficulty that I could make him understand, that in consequence of a wound in battle, my right leg was shortened four inches, which caused me to lean towards that side, and deprived me of so much in height. The evening having surprized us in the midst of our discourse, the Ulikamhy proposed to me to pass the night with him, and he informed me, that he was desirous I should stay three or four nights together, because a man would soon arrive who was able to converse with me, which I very ardently wished, in order to gather some information respecting the country.

About nine in the evening, Ulikamhy departed with his attendants, and we were likewise conducted to a house adjoining to his palace, where we were regaled with tea, rice, dried fish, roast meat, preserved fruits, &c. and towards the end, with a very sweet kind of wine. We made a very bad shift to eat with little sticks, and the servants had a good deal of trouble in teaching us.

After supper, cushions were laid for us on the carpet, where we passed a very good night. At eight in the morning, I received the report from on board, by which I found the Japanese had supplied us with one hundred sacks of rice, and twenty hogs, with a great quantity of fruits and dried fish, wine and poultry. This report was brought by a Japanese, whom I sent back with orders to set up our water casks.

About ten, A. M. we were informed, that Ulikamhy was coming. I went out to meet him, and saw him accompanied with three Bonzes, who had very large chaplets at their girdles. One of them saluted me in very good Dutch. The King came to me, gave me his hand, and made signs for me to speak with the Bonze newly arrived. I complimented him on his speaking a foreign language so well,

well, and he politely thanked me, by assuring me, that he should be happy to do me any service. This Bonze informed me that he was born at Touza, but that his parents, having been obliged to live at Ximo, he had an opportunity of learning the Dutch language at Nangafaki, and that he had become a Bonze, to deliver himself from the yoke of the secular power. With regard to Ulikamhy, he informed me, that he was King of the province, and had married one of the daughters of the Emperor; that he was one of the most learned men in the country, being acquainted with astronomy in the highest degree, and that his soul was endued with celestial qualities, having never done harm to any one; that he was adored in his own province, and desired in all the others. He then requested I would inform him who I was, and how I came to Japan? I gave him a description of my country, and of Europe in general, which, he said, he had heard some accounts of. I informed him, that having fell in battle, I was taken prisoner by the Russians, who had violated the common law of nations, by sending me into exile at Kamchatka, from whence I had delivered myself with courage, to return to my own country, but that contrary winds having obliged me to touch at Japan, I had come thither with fear, on account of the relations the Hollanders had wickedly published, that the Japanese put the Christians to death. Upon these last words he replied, that it was true, that there was a decree of the Emperor not to admit any Spanish or Portuguese Christian into the country, but that the decree did not affect the Christians of other nations, who had never done harm to the empire. He was going on with his discourse, when Ulikamhy sent for us: we therefore went to him at his palace in the garden, where we were regaled with fruits and tea. The Bonze related to Ulikamhy, what he had learned

learned from me, upon which he proposed several questions concerning the manner of fighting in Europe. He condoled with me upon my fate, and made me an offer to remain at Japan, where he promised he would procure from the Emperor an important command in his armies. I thanked him for his goodness, but excused myself on account of my family, the situation of which could not but be an object which I held too much at heart. The King approved my sentiments, and afterwards questioned me respecting the Hollanders, whose true history I thought proper to relate, at the end of which, he thanked me for having told him the truth; for, he said, he knew very well that the Hollanders were but a small merchant people, who were subjected to a Prince who received money of them, as a reward for defending them with his troops. I took the liberty likewise to ask the King, whether he thought the Hollanders were Christians, and he replied, that merchants had no religion, their only faith consisting in getting money, while they gave themselves very little trouble about the belief of a God. Being well satisfied with this answer, I was desirous of proposing several other questions, but we were informed dinner was ready. I was served upon a small table, two feet high, opposite that of Ulikamhy. The repast consisted of rice, roast meat, preserves, and a great variety of sweetmeats, with a liquor resembling hydromel. During the whole dinner, the King talked continually with the Bonze, and it was not till the serving up of the desert, that he asked me whether I was a Christian, strong enough to die in defence of the Cross. I replied, that I had no other respect for the Cross than what the value of its materials might demand, and that certainly I should never expect to find a nation so absurd as to put me to death for saying,

with truth, that wood was neither more nor less than wood. Hereupon he informed me, that I had not understood him, as he meant to ask, whether I was resolved to die for my God? I answered, that by dying for my God, I should likewise die for the God of the Japanese, because I acknowledged one only God, who had created every material and visible thing. This answer satisfied him, for he exclaimed Namandabaz, and caused me to be told, that I was truly a Japanese in my religion, if I believed in nothing else. I was contented to inform him of my faith, that I had no other belief than in the only God, the Creator of all things, and that my whole religion consisted in doing as much good to my fellow-creatures as was in my power, and to injure no one. After this information, the King embraced me, and said Sindaulla, Sindaulla, which denotes very well, very well; and then he retired to take his evening's repose.

After his departure, I walked in the garden with the Bonze, who gave me an account of this rich and extensive country, its government and policy; I made a few notes at that time, to enable me to commit my observations to paper more at large at a convenient opportunity.

Sunday, July 31, 1771. At the palace of the King Ulikamhy, at Japan, at the bottom of the Gulph of Ufilpatchar. The Bonze requested me, at three in the afternoon, to give orders to accompany him on board my vessel, which he was desirous of seeing. I directed Mr. Bocsfarew to accompany him, with orders to make him a present of fables, and to receive him with kindness and respect. At the same time, I sent instructions to bring on shore six pair of fine beaver skins, twenty-four foxes skins, and twenty-four fables, with forty good muskets well cleaned, and two pieces of cannon on their carriages. These cannon were mo
tels
which

which I had found in Kamchatka; and, as the Bonze had procured for me the order and permission to bring my people on shore, I allowed a certain number of the company to land every day. After the departure of the Bonze I laid down to rest, on account of a violent head-ach I was afflicted with. When I awoke, that is to say, at eight in the evening, the Bonze returned, and thanked me for the politeness with which he had been received on board, and the presents which had been made. We supped alone, for the King, with all his attendants, was gone to a neighbouring town. During our supper, and afterwards, we continued our conversation, and I found abundance of good sense and understanding in the discourse of the Bonze. It was very late before we separated; and as the rest I had taken after dinner prevented me from sleeping, I walked out into the garden, whereupon, approaching the house of the King, I heard a female voice, accompanied by some stringed instrument. The music and the song appeared to be not deficient in melody.

At day-break I received an account, that the presents I had sent for were on their way, and that Mess. Panow, Baturin, and Kuzneczow were coming, in order to be presented to the King; that all was quiet on board, and that the associates behaved in such a manner as to make themselves beloved by the natives.

At ten Mr. Panow, with his companions, arrived, and the presents were carried into my apartment. About eleven the return of Ulikamhy was announced by a noise, and the sound of an hundred different instruments. The Bonze recommended me to meet him, and present my companions, which I immediately did. The first conversation consisted only of the ordinary civilities; but, as the Bonze had seized a favourable opportunity to inform him

of the presents, he expressed so strong a desire to examine them himself, that he postponed dinner, and repaired to my apartment. When I presented the articles, I pronounced a discourse, which was received with the most engaging attention; I then accompanied the King, where I found thirty-five covered tables for three persons at each table. Every thing was served up with surprising elegance and order. During the time of dinner several instruments were heard, which, though confused, were nevertheless agreeable. After dinner we proceeded to the garden, where the arms were tried at a certain distance. The butt was a round piece of wood, covered with paper, and several of my companions distinguished themselves. The King was at last desirous of making a trial himself, and after having charged one of the muskets, he caused a horse to be brought, at which he fired with so good an aim, that it fell down lifeless. His satisfaction was extreme, and, in the fulness of his joy, he assured me, that I might make any request I chose, with the certainty of obtaining it. I availed myself of this favourable instant, to request permission, that I might return into his dominions, to open a trade under his protection. His answer surprized me, for he granted me this favour without hesitation; observing, at the same time, that my character had destroyed the prejudices he had imbibed by tradition, and that he not only granted me his protection in his dominions, but likewise would exert his influence with the Emperor, to obtain permission, that my vessels might enter all his other harbours. He assured me I might depend on his promise, as long as my views should be directed to trade only, and I should not aim at establishing any change of religion, or endeavour to acquire power by building fortresses. He concluded his discourse, by informing me, that before my departure, he would con-

tract

tract engagements with me under the confirmation of a mutual oath.

Monday, August 1. Towards the evening, I saw preparations made for a grand illumination, and as my interpreter, the Bonze, was absent, I was anxious to know the cause. He arrived later than ordinary, and informed me, that the King had convened the great men of his country, to whom he was desirous of presenting me, for which reason I was requested to wait upon him; and, as he thought it necessary to inform me of the formalities to be observed, he took that trouble upon himself, after which he led me towards the great hall, where I was received at the foot of the steps by two gentlemen richly cloathed, who introduced me into the hall, and placed me immediately opposite the King, who was seated on very rich carpets, having a quantity of armed gentlemen, with their sabres drawn, beside him. In a right line between myself and the King, I saw eighteen principal Japanese seated on carpets, and a number of armed men behind each of them.

Such was the order in which I found the assembly. The Bonze stood up beside me, and near the King stood the literary lords, with paper, ink, and pencils in their hands. One of them demanded, with a loud voice, who I was? why I came to Japan? whence I came? and whither I was bound? The Bonze interpreted these demands, and I made the same answer I had before given to the King. The next question was, whether I was desirous of establishing a trade for my nation, and what it would consist in. To the first part I answered in the affirmative, but excused myself with regard to the second, because, not being a merchant by profession, I could not speak determinately to it; but I promised, that at my first voyage, I would bring merchants with me, and should be able to enter
into

into formal submissions. The King was content to reply, that the vessels should be loaded with furs, which I absolutely promised. The last of all his demands were, that I should bind myself never to bring to Japan any book treating of religion, and still less any Bonze of my own country, which I likewise promised; after which the Bonze told me I might retire. He soon afterwards came to me, to inform me that Ulikamhy was about to retire to the town of Kilinigue; but that before his departure, he would make me presents, and give me a flag, by which I might be known on my return to Japan; and that the King, moreover, was desirous of entrusting me with a gentleman, to make the voyage with me, on condition that I should bring him back the earliest opportunity.

About nine in the evening I received advice from on board, that all was in readiness for sailing; that the ship was full of provisions; and I learned with pleasure, that the women on board had received visits, and several presents, from the Japanese women. About ten, supper was served up in my apartment, at which the Bonze and my officers were present. At six in the morning I was informed of the arrival of the presents of the King, which were brought by two gentlemen, the Bonze preceding them. He declared that he had orders to accompany me on board, or to remain with me all the time I might chuse to stay until my departure. The presents consisted of a sabre, ornamented with gold, and suspended to a belt wrought with fine pearls; a complete service of porcelain, gilt; a quantity of tea and tobacco; a flag, to be displayed upon my return, containing an inscription; a little box filled with different jewellery; and another box, containing fifty pieces of gold, each weighing two ounces and a quarter, intended to defray the expences

pences of the voyage of the young gentleman whom the Bonze presented to me.

Being informed tha. the King was already gone, I acquainted the Bonze, that I was likewise determined to go on board, which being interpreted to a gentleman present, palanquins were soon brought, in which we were carried to the sea side: here we found a prodigious number of people, who cried out " Uli ulan," &c. As soon as we came to the harbour, near thirty boats appeared, with whom we went on board, in company with the Bonze and two gentlemen, who perceiving that my small boat was worn out, sent on shore for another, which was built in a superior manner, quite new, and varnished. They presented us with this in the name of the King; and for my part, I made new presents to the Bonze and the two gentlemen. These last put into my hands two rolls of papers, containing, as the Bonze informed me, permission to return to Japan. They all three recommended to my care the young man, who was to go the voyage with me; and I did not observe any embarrassment in him, at finding himself among strangers. They then returned to the shore, and on my arrival on board, Mr. Crustiew informed me, that the associates had carried on a very advantageous trade with the Japanese, to whom they sold a quantity of furs, and received, in exchange, gold, porcelain, pearls, and other articles.

According to the report, all well.

Tuesday, August 2. On board the corvette, St. Peter and St. Paul, at anchor in the gulph of Ufilpatchar. A light breeze from the eastward, and fine weather. This day I assembled the whole company, to determine whether we should carry our project into execution, and make an incursion, according to the plan stipulated at the island of
Liquor;

Liquor ; but not one of them ventured to reply. I then took advantage of their silence, and declared, that I thought it would be most advantageous to continue our course to Canton, in China, where we might sell our furs, and return to Europe ; and afterwards, under the protection of some sovereign power, carry into execution a more certain project of forming a permanent colony, in which we could not fail, as we had the good fortune to open the trade of Japan. These words were scarcely spoken, before the whole company cried out, that I might follow my own pleasure in all things, and they would punctually obey. Upon this assurance, I gave orders to hoist our Japanese colours, and set sail. At three, P. M. having saluted the country with twenty-one guns, we set sail to the southward. We met an immense quantity of fishermen in our way, all of whom, at sight of us, called out " Uli ulan." The night continued fair, with a light breeze.

According to the report, all well. Latitude in, 34 degrees, 0 minutes ; longitude in, 341 degrees, 30 minutes. Wind from the eastward ; current from the south ; course south-west

Wednesday, August 3. Under sail. Several of the associates threw themselves at my feet, and intreated me to anchor again upon the coast of Japan, in order to procure them new opportunities of trading, and turning their furs to account. I granted their request the more readily, as I was desirous of becoming acquainted with the coast ; but I promised to consent to their wishes on condition, that they should behave with the most exact subordination. At sun-set, the weather appeared squally to the northward. At day-break we discovered an European vessel before us. I resolved to chase her, but I soon observed the Dutch colours ; and as the vessel

vessel stood to the south-south-east, I pursued my course, and suffered her to go on unmolested. I sailed along the coast of what I took to be a peninsula.

According to the report, all well. Latitude in, 33 degrees, 36 minutes; longitude in, 340 degrees, 20 minutes. Wind east-south-east; current south-east; course south-west one quarter south.

Thursday, August 4. On the coast of Japan, in sight of land, and in soundings of twenty eight fathoms; coarse sand and shells mixed with coral; all sails set, weather lowering, and a rising sea, with a fresh breeze from the south-east. The night was dark, and at ten, P. M. a storm began, attended with thunder and lightning. About three, P. M. a heavy shower fell, and abated the wind. At day-break, we found ourselves driven on the coast by a strong current from south to north. Finding that we were near an opening, which promised to lead us into some good road or harbour, I suffered the ship to drive, and at last came to, in sixteen fathoms. The small boat was immediately lowered into the water, and Messrs. Kuzneczow and Panow, with eight associates, went on board; and the Japanese passenger, who was to be put on shore in the shallop, with sixteen armed associates, followed under the command of Mr. Crustiew, to support the small boat, in case of need. After the dispatch of the boats, I gave orders for cleaning and loading our arms, and priming our great guns afresh.

According to the report, all in good health; the ship making no water. Latitude in, 33 degrees, 34 minutes; longitude in, 339 degrees, 12 minutes. Wind south-east; a strong current from the south; course south-west, but the current drove us to the north-west.

Friday,

Friday, August 5. At anchor on the coast of Japan, to the westward of the kingdom of Idzo. At two, P. M. the boats returned with a large Japanese vessel. When they came near us, Mr. Kuzneczow called to us to weigh our anchor, and send out towing ropes to the small boat, the shallop, and the Japanese vessel, to carry us into the harbour, which I accordingly did. Mr. Kuzneczow coming on board, informed me, that having happily arrived on shore, the Japanese, at first sight, fled before him; but after they heard the Japanese passenger call to them, they returned, and in consequence of his information, they had been very eager to shew their politeness to our people; that they proceeded to a village, where they were received with acclamations of joy, and the inhabitants gave them rice, tea, fruit, and a very agreeable liquor; that during their repast, a Japanese, armed with a sabre and lance, came and conversed with the passenger; after which he addressed his discourse to Mr. Kuzneczow, by pronouncing the words "Nanghasaki" "Kallas Tohollandi Fiaffi Guzarimas," and that immediately he ordered a boat to be got ready, giving them to understand, by signs, that he proposed to follow us, to conduct the vessel into the harbour, which he performed to our very great satisfaction.

At six we arrived at the mouth of the harbour, where we moored in eleven fathoms, muddy bottom. The Japanese boat quitted us, to go on shore, and soon returned with five others, which towed us to another situation, where we anchored in five fathoms, good anchoring ground, consisting of mud. The Japanese seeing us safely at anchor, left us, when I took the precaution to moor the ship. At ten, a well-clothed Japanese came on board, who informed me, by the interpretation of Mr. Bocsfarew, that he was appointed to guard us;
after

after which he immediately retired, and we soon perceived three long boats at anchor near us, each having three signal lights. On my side I likewise kept a sharp look out on board, with lighted matches hanging beside the guns. In the night the wind veered round to the south-west, and blew with such violence, that we thought ourselves fortunate that we were in a harbour. At seven in the morning a boat came alongside, and three gentlemen came on board, who questioned me, whence I came? how long I proposed to stay? whither I was bound? whether I was a Hollander? and in that case they requested a letter for Nanghasaki; and, after all, they desired to inspect the vessel, and demanded how many people we were on board. My answer was, that I came from afar, and was on my way to Nanghasaki; that I had anchored there to avoid the tempest; that I was in want of provisions and water; that I was desirous of trading; and, lastly, that our number amounted to one hundred and fifty men, who were in want of every thing, but that the vessel should not be inspected. I know not whether Boc-farew interpreted well or not, but I perceived they were not satisfied with us, for they made signs that they did not believe we were Hollanders, pointing to our beards and clothing, and at the same time exclaiming, "Hay, to Gollandi, To Pilipines;" whence I understood that they took us for Spaniards, coming from Manilla. I gave them a letter for the Hollanders, to the following effect:

Copy of the letter given to the Japanese, in the Bay of Misaqui, to be forwarded to the Hollanders at Nanghasaki.

"Health to the officers in chief of the Factory of
"the Dutch East India Company.

"I ACQUAINT you, gentlemen, that finding
"myself upon the coast of Japan, whither I was
driven

" driven by a series of those incidents which often
 " at sea compel the navigator to seek his safety
 " wherever he can, I find myself in distress, which
 " cannot be described; for which reason I have
 " thought proper to address myself to you, and to re-
 " quest you to send me an interpreter, and assistance
 " to conduct me to your port. My ship is a cor-
 " vette, with near one hundred persons on board.
 " An answer, if you please.

" I have the honour to be,

" GENTLEMEN,

" Your servant,

" MAURICE AUGUST. BENYOWSKY."

" P. S. In order that you may not be prejudiced
 " by suspicions against me, I declare to you, that
 " having been chief of the confederacy of Poland, I
 " had the misfortune to be made prisoner by the
 " Russians, whose sovereign exiled me to Kamchatka,
 " from whence I have made my escape, by the ex-
 " ertion of courage and valour, with ninety six
 " companions; and in consequence thereof I am
 " now upon the coast of Japan, in my way to re-
 " turn to Europe."

After the departure of the Japanese, my compa-
 nions, despairing of being able to open the trade
 without fighting, requested me to leave the harbour
 as soon as the wind should slacken; to which I con-
 sented, and immediately got under way, with a fa-
 vourable breeze from the north-north-west.

According to the report, all in good health.
 Under way, sailing out of the port of Misaki.

Saturday, August 6. Saw several thousand fish-
 ing boats, many of whose nets we broke, not being
 able

able to avoid them. We continued our course, with all sails set, the sea being calm, and a strong current from the south. At day-break no land nor vessel was in sight.

According to the report, all in good health. Latitude in, 32 degrees, 56 minutes; longitude in, 338 degrees. Wind north one quarter west; current from the south; course west.

Sunday, August 7. Wind and weather as yesterday. About sun-set, saw twenty or twenty-two vessels standing to the north-east. My companions being enraged at the disappointment of their hopes, at our second anchoring place, requested me to fall on those vessels; but I refused, as I did not mean to give the smallest cause of discontent to Ulikamhy; I therefore continued my course, with the wind and tide in my favour.

According to the report, all well. Latitude in, 32 degrees, 53 minutes; longitude in 336 degrees, 18 minutes. Wind north by east; current from the south; course west.

Monday, August 8. A pleasant breeze; the sea somewhat irregular, and fine hot weather. Continued our course, with all sails set. The night was clear star-light.

According to the report, all in good health. Latitude in 32 degrees, 51 minutes; longitude in, 333 degrees, 15 minutes. Wind north-north-east; current from the south; course west.

Tuesday, August 9. Fine weather, as yesterday. About sun-set we thought we saw land in the north-west quarter. At midnight saw several headlands. At day-break, found ourselves on the coast, and the wind being in our favour, I determined to come to. At noon, perceiving the entrance of a bay, I proceeded, and anchored in eighteen fathom water, coarse greenish sand.

According

According to the report, all well. Latitude in, 32 degrees, 45 minutes; longitude in, 330 degrees, 22 minutes. Wind north-east; current from the south; course west one quarter south.

Wednesday, August 10. The position of the vessel not permitting me to see all that happened on shore, I ordered Mr. Kuzneczow and Mr. Wynbladth, with eight associates, to land, and endeavour to insinuate themselves into the minds of the inhabitants; but the violent reception my companions met with, gave me reason to apprehend disagreeable consequences; but happily my fears were calmed, by the prudence of Mr. Kuzneczow, who, seeing the Japanese determined to defend the landing, returned. After the arrival of the boat, and upon the assurance that there was a town situated upon the coast of the bay, I weighed, and approached within one hundred fathoms of the shore, where I anchored in six fathoms; the night favoured my enterprize, and at day-break we were moored before the town. At seven in the morning I sent Messrs. Panow and Crustiew with Bocfarew as an interpreter, and twenty-two armed associates, having likewise mounted two pieces of artillery in the shallop.

After having dispatched the shallop and the small boat, I embarked myself in the Japanese yawl, which I had received as a present at Usilpatchar, and as it was the lightest, I landed first. The Japanese seeing us near the shore, presented themselves armed with lances and sabres, and appeared disposed to oppose our descent; but perceiving by our countenance that we were determined, at any rate, to land, they retired to a small distance. When I came on shore, I made signs to the Japanese to approach, and immediately an old man, of a good appearance, advanced, and demanded by what right we had landed in their country, and whether we had the permission of Daifi; observing, that the Dutch never came

came on shore without orders. I caused him to be answered, that we were neither Hollanders nor Spaniards, but men, and friends, who came for water and provisions. Whereupon the man replied, that we should have provisions and water sent on board, but that it was necessary we should ourselves go on board again. But as I declared that I would not quit the land before I had received provisions and water, the Japanese hastened to load three boats, with which I went on board. Several of the Japanese having come on board, began to trade with my people, and hastened to return again to shore, whence they arrived with ten other boats, laden with copper, porcelain, tea, sabres, silk, and gold, which they exchanged for furs. These commercial transactions familiarized them with us, and several among them testified their attachment; among others, a young man said much to me, without being able to make himself understood; when, being out of patience, he repeated, "To Hollandi, To Sindzi, Pupu Tippo," which I understood, and in answer, led him to the guns, and said, "To Gollandi, pu." Towards noon the Japanese retired.

According to the report, all in good health. At anchor on the coast of the island Xicoco, in the harbour of Toufa.

Thursday, August 11. Extremely hot weather, with some showers at intervals. About two, P. M. we heard a great noise on shore resembling the beating of many drums, and soon after we perceived on shore a quantity of men on horseback, armed with lances and darts, and a still greater number on foot, who hastened on board an infinite number of boats. Upon this appearance, I immediately sent Mr. Panow, with Bocfarew, and eighteen associates, to declare to the Japanese, that I was desirous of being informed of their intentions, that I might receive them either as friends, or enemies. But they had hardly put off before I perceived three
small

small boats rowing from the shore, the middle one of which had five flags, and near fifteen streamers. I took these for marks of distinction, and therefore prepared myself to salute them on their arrival. Our small boat at last accosted the Japanese, and performed its commission; and afterwards returning with them, I saluted the Japanese by a running fire of musquetry, intermixed with the discharge of six of our great guns. This mark of politeness was sufficient to have driven our visitors back, for their fear was such, that they fell on their faces in their boats, and could scarcely be persuaded to rise by any encouragement of Boscarew, who urged them to proceed. But as I was ignorant of all this, I gave orders to fire six additional guns, at the instant the Japanese gentleman entered the ship, which was accordingly performed. His terror at this noise was so great, that he fainted away, and it was more than a quarter of an hour before he was able to speak. To revive his spirits, I gave him some Japanese wine mixed with sugar, which comforted him, and restored his courage. I then caused Mr. Boscarew to ask what he had to say to me. He informed me, that he was Uchaymi Mamas, commander of the guard of the coast of the kingdom Touza; and that being informed that we were strangers, who arrived in the country without orders of the Emperor, he was come to arrest us; and to prove that we ought to obey him, he drew a large roll of paper from beneath his habit, which he presented to me. Upon this, pretending to be ignorant, or not to understand what he said, I received the roll, and gave it to Mr. Crustiew, with orders to keep it; at sight of which the poor devil requested his paper, and pointed to his neck, to shew me, that by losing his deputation, he should be punished with death. To set him at ease, I caused his paper to be returned; but informed him, by my interpreter,

ter, that I esteemed his master, and should be his friend, as long as I should be convinced that he was just, when assured of the contrary, I should despise him. At these words Mimam shut his ears, and I found great difficulty in making him understand, that he might think himself very happy that I did not arrest him himself. The tone of assurance with which he saw me speak to the interpreter, softened him, and I seized the opportunity to make him a present of a beaver skin, and six fables, which he was very glad of; and I saw him retire with satisfaction, and promises of friendship.

After his departure, being convinced that we could not carry on any regular commerce at this place, I weighed, and taking the advantage of a breeze from the northward, made sail, and stood to the south. At day-break we saw a vessel, on which I fired, but he would not come to, until a shot struck him. I then sent my shallop on board, but we found her to be only a fishing vessel, and let her depart in peace.

According to the report, all well; the ship making no water. Latitude in, 32 degrees, 15 minutes; longitude in, 350 degrees, 16 minutes. Wind north; no current; course south.

Friday, August 12. Fine clear weather, and excessive hot, with a moderate breeze. Doubling a cape we saw four barks; after which I stood for a short time, but as they directed their course to the north-west, I gave up the chase, and stood again to the southward. At six, P. M. saw land on the starboard bow, at the distance of five leagues, for which reason I kept only the topsails set. About three in the morning we were so near the shore, that we heard the breakers; and at day-break we saw the danger we had happily avoided. At seven we saw another land a-head, and as we approached it very rapidly, we saw it very distinctly, at ten, bearing

ing due south, and a small island south-west. My companions proposed to me to make a descent in a bay, then in sight, and I could not resist their pressing solicitations. I therefore anchored in twenty-two fathoms, between the small and the large island; but at a very short distance from the latter. Mr. Kuzneczow was immediately dispatched, with eight associates, and I sent the shallop after him. When we had entered the sound, which we at first supposed to be a bay, the small boat passed very near a large bark at anchor, whose crew shot at them with arrows, and at the same time near sixty boats put off from the shore, so that my people were in great danger. I was advised of this by two reports of the pateraroes which I heard, and I immediately weighed, and proceeded to support my detachment, by entering the sound. I soon perceived the state of affairs, and standing towards the great bark, I fired two shots into her, which drove all her people from the deck. The shallop then went along-side, and took possession of the vessel, while, on my part, I approached the shore, and anchored in four fathoms and an half, at the distance of half a cannon shot off shore, whither I likewise caused the Japanese bark to be brought, in which we found fifty-fix men, four of them being mimas, or gentlemen; revenue officers of the Emperor. The lading of the bark consisted of tobacco, sugar, silk, varnish, porcelain, one hundred pieces of leather, some bales of cotton and silk, several chests of fabres, belts, and other articles of wearing apparel.

According to the report, two sick; the ship making no water. Latitude in, 30 degrees, 38 minutes; longitude in, 329 degrees, 51 minutes. Wind north; current north-east; course south one quarter west.

Saturday, August 13. At anchor near the island Tacasima. I assembled the company, to decide what was

was best to be done; and the society determined to take the lading of the bark on board, and quit the island. But that which gave me the most satisfaction, was, that my Japanese passenger, who had accompanied Mr. Kuzneczow, was wounded by an arrow in the attack. We provoked him, and he declared to Bocfarew, that he should be very glad if we would kill all the prisoners, as he assured us that they belonged to the island Ximo, all whose inhabitants were wicked, and good for nothing. Mr. Bocfarew succeeded in making himself more clearly understood by him, for which reason I availed myself of the services of both, to examine the officers who were prisoners. They replied, that they were civil officers, charged to collect the revenues of the island Tacasima, and of the island Nanghafaki; that they had entered the harbour only a moment before us, having seen at a distance the chase I had made of several barks, likewise carrying officers to collect the revenues in the southern provinces; that they had entered Tacasima with no other view than to put the inhabitants on their guard against us; and that they had only done their duty in attacking our people. I caused my interpreter to answer them, that I approved their zeal, and that their want of success was no fault of theirs; but that, as they were now in my power, I thought it proper to prevent them from doing me any injury, and for that reason I should confine them till my departure. They entreated that I would not detain them, for they said that they were ordered to repair, in the course of eight days, to the port of Vrandá, to join the convoy, which would depart about the end of the month, to the number of five hundred vessels, for the port of Ofachta; but when they understood that they were no longer permitted to hope that I would restore their vessel, they shewed signs of the utmost despair. Their prayers, however, were

in vain, for my companions certainly were not disposed to attend to them; and all that I could obtain was, that the lives of these unhappy people should be spared.

At five in the evening, I sent four of them on shore, to demand boats, that the rest might be landed; but it was not till seven in the evening that six boats came off, in which I sent them away, under the conduct of sixteen of my associates. About nine I weighed, and made sail, and with much difficulty (by the assistance of the boats which towed us) we got out of the sound. As soon as we were in the open channel, we continued our course to the south-west during the whole night; and as my companions were unacquainted with the manner of working the bark, I was forced to take her in tow, which impeded my course. For this reason I determined to take her lading on board, which was done in the course of the day, after which we scuttled and sunk her. The cargo of this bark would have been worth three or four hundred thousand livres, French money, if we had been in Europe.

According to the report, one sick. Sprung a leak. Latitude in, 30 degrees, 0 minutes; longitude in, 528 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind north; no current; course south-west by south.

Sunday, August 14. Excessive hot weather. The leak continually increasing, demanded our exertions to prevent its consequences. After some search, it was at last discovered that the water entered in a stream as large as a man's arm, through a cleft in the fore part of the ship. This misfortune was, no doubt, occasioned by the carelessness of my associates, who, in discharging the Japanese bark, and coming alongside, had knocked the oakum out of some of the seams under the water; and as it was impossible for us to remedy this misfortune, we were extremely alarmed. At sun-set the wind slackened,
and

and the water became agitated, with a noise resembling that of a river falling into the sea. From six, P. M. till noon, the pumps were kept constantly at work, without being able to clear the well, in which we had continually three or four feet water.

At eight, a breeze sprung up in the north-east quarter, and the man at the mast-head called out land. Unfortunately the ship's cargo was shifted by the water so much, and she heeled to starboard to such a degree, that the pumps could not be worked, and the water entered upon the deck. In this most deplorable situation, finding myself at the mouth of the streight, between the two islands, the direction of which I could see but very confusedly in the night, I determined to advance with the lead going. The ship soon after being somewhat righted, I employed all my people in pumping and baling, for there were near five feet water in the hold. During this laborious business I sent Mr. Kuzneczow on shore, to discover a good anchoring place; and about two in the morning he returned, with the news that he had found a good and commodious harbour. I therefore resolved to proceed to it; and as I durst not fatigue the vessel by weighing the anchor, I slipped the cable, and stood forward under the topsails. At half past three we arrived at the place Mr. Kuzneczow had pointed out. I found the entrance dangerous; and perceiving the wind increasing, and disposed to be stormy, I was extremely alarmed, and lowered down the Japanese yawl, in which I went a-head with four associates, after having given orders that the ship should stand after us with all the sail she could set. At four we had a dreadful storm, the sea being all in a foam, and notwithstanding our efforts to keep a-head, the ship over-ran us; and to complete our misfortune, the yawl struck on a rock off the southern point of a bay, and overfet, at the distance of about two hundred fathoms from the shore

shore. I used the utmost exertions to reach the port by swimming, but the sea was so rough, that it was not till after the greatest exertions that I reached the shore, quite exhausted. I lost all recollection of what followed, until I was roused by my companions, who, having taken notice of the rock on which the yawl overset, sent the small boat to take us up. Loginow, one of the people who was with me, called to them, and they at last found me in a state of stupefaction, at the foot of a tree. The information I received from them, that the ship was at anchor in a good harbour, and that the island was inhabited, made me forget the past misfortune, and I pressed them to return; but understanding that three of my associates were still wanting, I engaged them to proceed in the search of these unfortunate men, of whom we found one, named Andreanow; alive, and the other two dead upon the beach. After this we embarked, almost lifeless, and went alongside the ship, which was at anchor in four fathom water, and so deeply immersed, that I determined to run her aground upon a sand bank. At eleven, I was, by my own orders, carried on shore; for the fatigue had exhausted me so much, that I could not stir any of my limbs. My associates set up a tent, while others were employed in unloading the cargo; and Mr. Baturin undertook to bury the two people who were drowned.

According to the report, seven sick; the vessel aground. Latitude in, 29 degrees, 0 minutes; longitude in, 326 degrees, 20 minutes. Wind north-east; current from the northward; course south-west one quarter south.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

